



*The Bancroft Library*

University of California • Berkeley

Gift of

Robert W. Brower

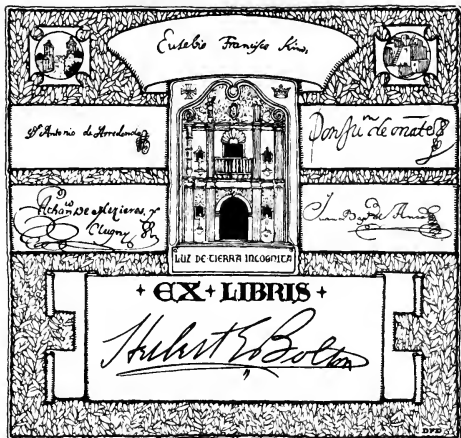


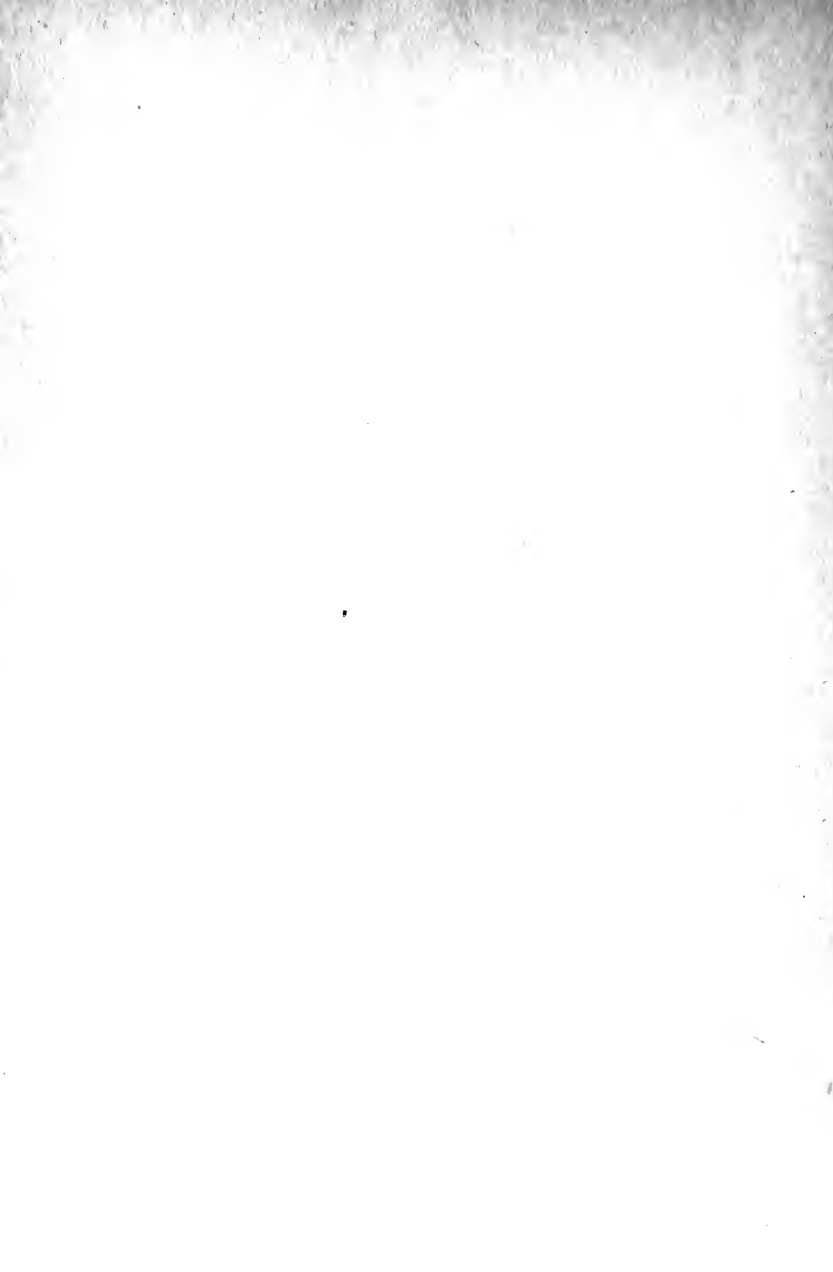
FROM THE LIBRARY OF

*Robert Brower*









# ANZA'S CALIFORNIA EXPEDITIONS

VOLUME V

## CORRESPONDENCE

TRANSLATED FROM THE ORIGINAL SPANISH  
MANUSCRIPTS AND EDITED

BY

HERBERT EUGENE BOLTON

PROFESSOR OF AMERICAN HISTORY AND  
DIRECTOR OF THE BANCROFT LIBRARY  
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA

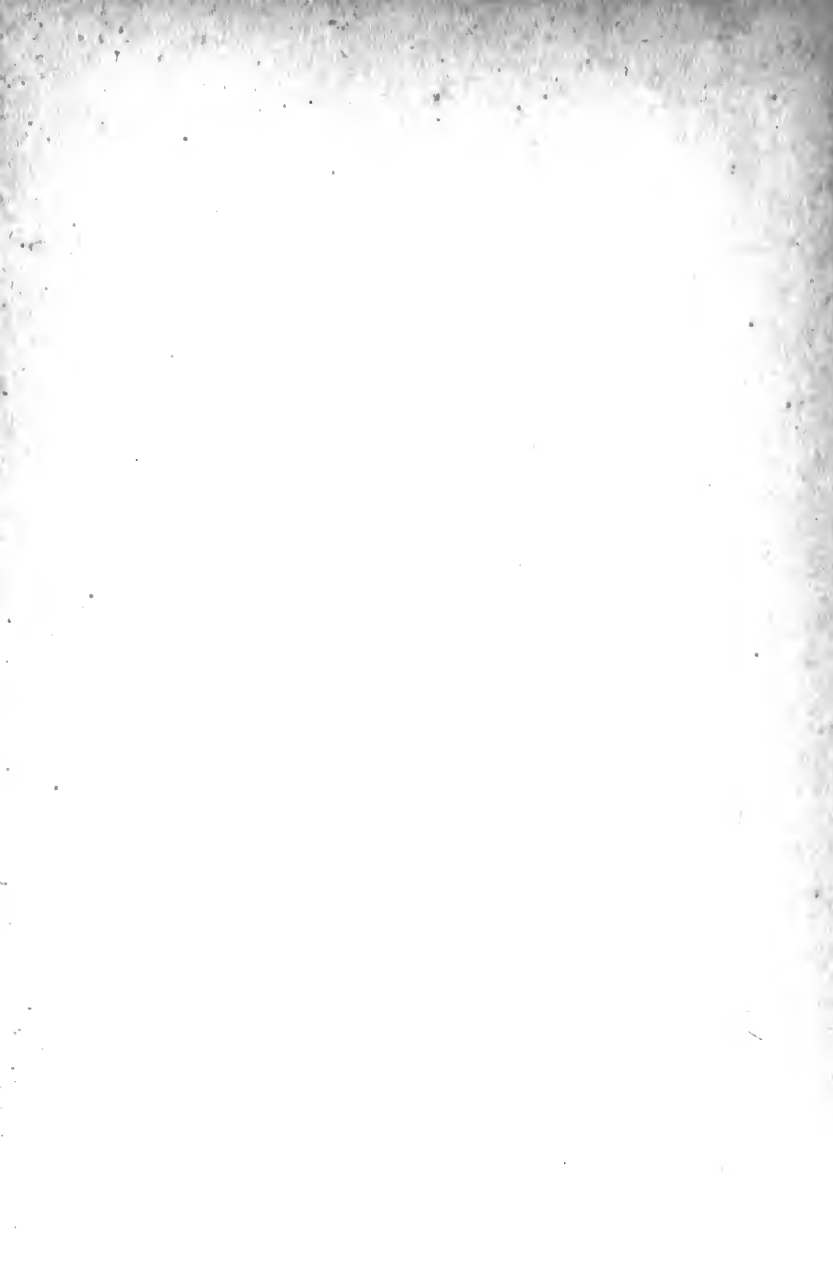
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA PRESS  
BERKELEY, CALIFORNIA  
1930

COPYRIGHT, 1930, BY

THE REGENTS OF THE UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA

THE PUBLICATION OF THIS VOLUME  
WAS MADE POSSIBLE BY

SIDNEY M. EHRLMAN



## PREFACE

Besides the diaries of the Anza expeditions, I have assembled and am here publishing an entire volume of correspondence. In my selection I have chosen only documents directly pertinent to the subject. If I had gone afield even in a small degree it would have been easy to compile several volumes.

The epistolary materials are wide in variety and rich in human interest. They include communications from high officials in Spain and Mexico, and from humbler ones on the distant frontiers of Sonora and California. There are letters by anxious participants in the actual expeditions, and others by observers from the sidelines, who, without responsibility, are free to criticize. It is through the correspondence that we learn the details of the genesis, organization, and equipment of the Anza expeditions. It is his long, numerous, and thoughtful dispatches that reveal Bucareli's solicitude for California and his faith in the man chosen to lead. Notable are the letters written by Anza, Díaz, and Garcés while actually enroute, and sent back in the care of faithful and strong-hearted couriers. These echoes from the trail are precious supplements to the more routine diaries. Perhaps the most interesting group of all are the letters written by Anza from Santa Olaya, in that desolate plain, at the moment in each expedition when he faced the supreme test—the battle with the Colorado Desert. It is such flashes as these, produced in the heat of the struggle, that best disclose the man whom Bucareli trusted—a man steady, level headed, cautious, cheerful, unafraid.

## PREFACE

### GROUPS OF CORRESPONDENCE

Much of the correspondence incident to arranging for the expeditions, accounts of the journeys written enroute, and official reports sent from Mexico to Spain concerning the expeditions while on the way and after they returned, are found in a few special expedientes or files. The principal groups are listed here. Besides these files, other documents are scattered in various places, as is shown by the citations in the body of this work. The principal repositories of the manuscripts here indicated are the archives of Mexico and Spain, the Santa Barbara Archives and the Bancroft Library.

### THE FIRST EXPEDITION

I. Año de 1737. N.º 2. Expediente movido por el Capitan de el Presidio de Tuvac en Sonora D. Juan Baptista de Anza sobre que se le permitiese hacer una expedicion para descubrir camino por tierra a la Costa Septentrional de la California. Aunque esto no tuvo efecto en aquel tiempo le ha verificado en este año de 1774 D. Juan Baptista de Ansa hijo del antecede<sup>te</sup> y Cap.<sup>n</sup> del propio Presidio llegando hasta el Presidio, de Monterrey de donde ha buuelto. Archivo General y Público, Mexico, Provincias Internas, Tomo 245.

This is the original expediente dealing with the proposals of Anza's father in 1737.

II. Año de 1773. No. 1. Sonora No. 33 G. G. No. 16. Expediente formado sobre la proposicion de D.<sup>n</sup> Juan Bau.<sup>ta</sup> de Ansa, Capitan del Presidio de Tubac acerca de descubrir camino por los Rios Gila y Colorado para los Nuevos Establecimientos de la California Septentrional. Archivo General y Público, Mexico, Historia, Tomo 396.

III. Testimonio del exped.<sup>te</sup> formado á consulta del capitan del Rl. Presidio de Tubac Dn. Juan Bap.<sup>ta</sup> de Anza



## PREFACE

sobre que se le permita abrir comunicac.<sup>on</sup> por Tierra con el Puerto de Monterrey. Certified on October 26, 1772, by Joseph de Gorráez. Transmitted with dispatch No. 613, Mexico, October 27, 1772. Archivo General de Indias, Sevilla, 104-6-15.

This testimonio is a copy of the first twelve items in the original expediente (II). It carries the file through the first junta de guerra held to consider the case, when a report was made to the king. It lacks some documents contained in II, which were added subsequently and sent to Spain as part of V. Copies of the documents in this expediente, certified in Mexico on October 26, 1772, by Joseph de Gorráez, are indicated in IV.

IV. Documentos del N.º 613. Archivo General y Público, Mexico. Correspondencia de los Virreyes, II Série, Bucareli, 1772, Tomo 14/31.

This file contains copies of the documents in the expediente in Historia, Tomo 396, dealing with the genesis of Anza's first expedition, down to October 26, 1772. They are duplicates of the documents sent to Spain with dispatch No. 613, Mexico, October 27, 1772 (III).

V. Superior Gobierno, Año de 1773. Testimonio del Expediente formado á fin de descubrir Camino por los Rios Gila y Colorado p.<sup>a</sup> los Nuevos Establecimientos de la California Septentrional. Archivo General de Indias, Sevilla, 104-6-15. This is a certified copy, attested in Mexico by Gorráez on September 25, 1773. Enclosed with letter No. 1097 from Bucareli to Arriaga, September 26.

This expediente is comprehensive in character, containing all the documents in the earlier files on the same subject (I, II, III, IV) besides those that accumulated down to the approval of Anza's proposal.

VI. Bucareli to Arriaga, No. 1389. Mexico, May 27, 1774. El Virrey de N. E. Remite Copias de Cartas del

## PREFACE

Capitan D. Juan Baptista de Ansa, del Gobernador de Sonora, y Dn. Bernardo de Urrea, que acreditan los progresos de la Expedicion por Trra. desde Sonora á Monterey, la felicidad con que havia pasado los Rios Colorado y Gila, y la multitud de Gentiles que encontraba en aquellas Tierras hasta aora no conocidas. Archivo General de Indias, Sevilla, 104-6-15.

With this letter are enclosed the documents referred to in the title. Another file of this correspondence is indicated in VII, below.

VII. Documentos del No. 1389. Archivo General y Público, Mexico. Correspondencia de los Virreyes, II Série, Bucareli, 1774, Tomo 37/54.

These are copies of the documents sent to Spain with dispatch No. 1389, listed above (VI).

VIII. Expediente sobre la Sublevacion de los indios de la Pimeria Alta. Archivo General de Indias, Sevilla, 104-3-4.

Contains a copy of Anza's Complete Diary, and copies of his letters from Santa Olaya, Feb. 28, 1774, and San Gabriel, April 10, 1774.

IX. Bucareli to Arriaga, No. 1421, June 26, 1774. El Virrey de N. E. con copias autorizadas del Diario y Cartas desde la Mision de San Gabriel en la nueva California por el Capitan Dn. Juan Bau.<sup>ta</sup> de Ansa, dá Cuenta de estar verificado el descubrimiento de camino desde Sonora á aquella Costa: dice las prevenciones hechas con este motivo para las providencias Sucesivas, y recomendando el merito de Anza y sus soldados, pide para el primero el Grado de Teniente Coronel, y para los segundos un escudo de ventaxa. Archivo General de Indias, Sevilla, 104-6-15.

Duplicates of the documents sent to Spain with No. 1421 are in a file in the Archivo General y Público, Mexico. (See X.)

## PREFACE

X. Documentos del No. 1421. Archivo General y Público, Mexico. Correspondencia de los Virreyes, II Série, Bucareli, 1774, Tomo 38/35.

These documents are duplicates of those sent to Spain with dispatch No. 1421. June 26, 1774. (See IX.)

XI. Documentos Relativos á las Misiones de Californias. Quarto Série. Museo Nacional, Mexico.

### THE SECOND EXPEDITION

XII. Segunda Expedicion á San Francisco por D.<sup>n</sup> Juan Bautista de Ansa, resuelta en Junta de Real Hacienda de 16 de Diz.<sup>re</sup> de 1774. Archivo General y Público, Mexico, Provincias Internas, Tomo 134.

This file contains correspondence and proceedings relative to a new expedition to California by Anza, down to December 5, 1774.

XIII. Expediente y determinaciones sobre segunda expedicion por tierra a la nueva California, ocupacion y Poblacion del Puerto de San Francisco. Archivo General y Público, Mexico, Californias, Tomo 35. Expediente No. 1. Quaderno 3<sup>o</sup>. Certified copy, Mexico, March 20.

XIV. Testimonio del expediente formado sobre la segunda expedicion y entrada qe. por tierra ha de hacer el Captain D. Juan Bautista de Anza, desde el Presidio de Tubac á Monte Rey. Archivo General de Indias, Sevilla, 104-6-16.

Transmitted to Spain by Bucareli with dispatch No. 1640. Reservado, Mexico, December 27, 1774. Contains the same as XIII, with later items. Another copy of this testimonio is in A. G. P. M. (See XV.)

XV. Testimonio del Expediente formado sobre lo ultimam.<sup>te</sup> practicado. p.<sup>a</sup> la segunda expedicion q.<sup>e</sup> deve hacer D.<sup>n</sup> Juan Baupista de Anza Cap.<sup>n</sup> del Presidio

## PREFACE

de S.<sup>a</sup> Ygnacio de Tubac desde el á Monterrey con lo demas que dentro se expresa. Del. N.º 1640. Triplicado. Archivo General y Público, Mexico, Californias, Tomo 72. Certified by Gorráez, Mexico, January 18, 1775.

A certified copy is in the Archivo General de Indias, Sevilla, 104-6-16. It was transmitted by Bucareli to Arriaga in dispatch No. 1640, December 27, 1774 (XIV).

XVI. Ultimas Cartas del Then.<sup>te</sup> Cor.<sup>l</sup> Ansa, escritas desde el Rio Colorado. Archivo General y Público, Mexico, Historia, Tomo 396.

Contains six original letters by Anza to Bucareli and a list of supplies, written at Santa Olaya, December 8, 1775. Copies of these letters and the list, certified by Peramás, Mexico, March 20, 1777, are in the Archivo General y Público, Mexico, Provincias Internas, Tomo 169.

XVII. 13 Documentos que comprehénden 2 Diarios y Varias Cartas del P.<sup>e</sup> Garcés con sus respectivas contestaciones. Archivo General y Público, Mexico, Historia, Tomo 52.

XVIII. Carttas del P Garzes des<sup>e</sup> el Rio Colorado, desde 12 de Henero de este año de 1776. Archivo General y Público, Mexico, Provincias Internas, Tomo 169.

These are copies of some of the documents whose originals are in the Archivo General y Público, Mexico, Historia, Tomo 52 (13 documentos que comprehénden).

XIX. Instancia del Capitan de la Nacion Yuma Salvador Palma sobre que se establescan Misiones en su territorio á las margenes de los Rios Colorado y Gila donde habitan. Num.º 7, Nov. 11, 1776. Archivo General y Público Mexico, Provincias Internas, Tomo 23. Original.

Copies of this memorial by Salvador Palma are in the Archivo General de Indias, Sevilla, 104-6-18 and 104-6-19.

# CONTENTS

PAGE

|                   |   |
|-------------------|---|
| PREFACE . . . . . | V |
|-------------------|---|

## THE FIRST EXPEDITION

### THE GENESIS OF THE EXPEDITION

|  |    |
|--|----|
| I Anza to Pineda, Tubac, August 20, 1769 .                                       | 1  |
| II Anza to Bucareli, Tubac, May 2, 1772.<br>No. 264 . . . . .                    | 3  |
| III Costansó to Bucareli, Mexico, September<br>5, 1772 . . . . .                 | 8  |
| IV Areche to Bucareli, Mexico, October 12,<br>1772 . . . . .                     | 12 |
| V Council of War and Royal Exchequer,<br>Mexico, October 17, 1772 . . . . .      | 25 |
| VI Sastre to Bucareli, San Miguel de Hor-<br>casitas, October 19, 1772 . . . . . | 33 |
| VII Bucareli to Arriaga, Mexico, October 27,<br>1772. No. 613 . . . . .          | 41 |
| VIII Bucareli to Sastre, Mexico, January 13,<br>1773 . . . . .                   | 46 |
| IX Sastre to Bucareli, San Miguel de Hor-<br>casitas, January 21, 1773 . . . . . | 47 |
| X Anza to Bucareli, Camp San Bernardino,<br>January 22, 1773 . . . . .           | 50 |
| XI Bucareli to Arriaga, Mexico, January 27,<br>1773. No. 738 . . . . .           | 53 |
| XII Cartagena to Bucareli, Querétaro, Jan-<br>uary 29, 1773 . . . . .            | 55 |
| XIII Anza to Bucareli, Tubac, March 7, 1773.<br>No. 38 . . . . .                 | 57 |

# CONTENTS

|  | PAGE |
|--|------|
| XIV Garcés to Bucareli, Tubac, March 8, 1773                                     | 68   |
| XV Bucareli to Arriaga, Mexico, April 26,<br>1773. No. 889 . . . . .             | 77   |
| XVI Arriaga to Bucareli, Aranjuez, May 12,<br>1773 . . . . .                     | 79   |
| XVII Areche to Bucareli, Mexico, August 14,<br>1773 . . . . .                    | 80   |
| XVIII Council of War and Royal Exchequer,<br>Mexico, September 9, 1773 . . . . . | 82   |
| XIX Bucareli to Rivera y Moncada, Mexico,<br>September 19, 1773 . . . . .        | 94   |
| XX Bucareli to Arriaga, Mexico, September<br>26, 1773. No. 1097 . . . . .        | 95   |
| XXI Rivera y Moncada to Bucareli, Guadala-<br>jara, October 12, 1773 . . . . .   | 99   |
| XXII Gálvez to Arriaga, Madrid, March 8, 1774                                    | 102  |
| XXIII Arriaga to Bucareli, El Pardo, March 9,<br>1774 . . . . .                  | 107  |

## LETTERS WRITTEN ON THE WAY

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| XXIV Anza to Bucareli, El Altar, January 18,<br>1774 . . . . .             | 109 |
| XXV Anza to Bucareli, El Altar, January 18,<br>1774 . . . . .              | 111 |
| XXVI Anza to Bucareli, San Dionisio, February<br>9, 1774 . . . . .         | 113 |
| XXVII Anza to Bucareli, Santa Olaya, February<br>28, 1774. No. 2 . . . . . | 117 |
| XXVIII Serra to the Guardian, San Diego, March<br>31, 1774 . . . . .       | 121 |
| XXIX Díaz to Bucareli, San Gabriel, April 8,<br>1774 . . . . .             | 128 |
| XXX Anza to Bucareli, San Gabriel, April 10,<br>1774. No. 3 . . . . .      | 130 |

## CONTENTS

|   | PAGE |
|---|------|
| XXXI Palóu to the Guardian, Mission of San Carlos, April 22, 1774 . . . . .       | 135  |
| XXXII Lasuén to Pangua, Mission San Gabriel, April 23, 1774 . . . . .             | 141  |
| XXXIII Garcés to Bucareli, La Junta, April 27, 1774 . . . . .                     | 143  |
| XXXIV Lasuén to the College of San Fernando, Mission San Gabriel, May 2, 1774 . . | 148  |
| XXXV Anza to Bucareli, Terrenate, June 8, 1774                                    | 150  |
| XXXVI Díaz to Bucareli, Tubac, June 12, 1774 .                                    | 153  |
| XXXVII Declaration of Juan Bautista Baldés, Mexico, June 14, 1774 . . . . .       | 155  |

### OFFICIAL REPORTS OF THE EXPEDITION

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| XXXVIII Urrea to Bucareli, El Altar, February 22, 1774 . . . . .             | 160 |
| XXXIX Bucareli to Arriaga, Mexico, February 24, 1774. No. 1279 . . . . .     | 162 |
| XL Crespo to Bucareli, San Miguel de Horcasitas, February 25, 1774 . . . . . | 164 |
| XLI Bucareli to Palóu, Mexico, May 25, 1774                                  | 165 |
| XLII Bucareli to Arriaga, Mexico, May 27, 1774. No. 1389 . . . . .           | 169 |
| XLIII Bucareli to Arriaga, Mexico, May 27, 1774. No. 1391 . . . . .          | 173 |
| XLIV Bucareli to Arriaga, Mexico, June 26, 1774. No. 1421 . . . . .          | 175 |
| XLV Bucareli to Arriaga, Mexico, August 27, 1774. No. 1489 . . . . .         | 183 |
| XLVI Bucareli to Arriaga, Mexico, September 26, 1774. No. 1521 . . . . .     | 186 |
| XLVII Arriaga to Bucareli, San Ildefonso, October 2, 1774 . . . . .          | 188 |

# CONTENTS

|   | PAGE |
|---|------|
| XLVIII Anza's Commission as Lieutenant-colonel<br>of Cavalry, San Ildefonso, October 4,<br>1774 . . . . . | 190  |
| XLIX Arriaga to Bucareli, San Lorenzo, Octo-<br>ber 8, 1774 . . . . .                                     | 192  |
| L Bucareli to Arriaga, Mexico, November<br>26, 1774. No. 1609 . . . . .                                   | 194  |
| LI San Martín Cueto to Arriaga, Madrid,<br>February 4, 1775 . . . . .                                     | 199  |
| LII Bucareli to Arriaga, Mexico, February<br>24, 1775. No. 1738 . . . . .                                 | 201  |
| LIII List of Anza's Followers, Mexico, Febru-<br>ary 24, 1775 . . . . .                                   | 203  |
| LIV Neve to Serra, Loreto, April 8, 1775 . .  | 204  |

## THE SECOND EXPEDITION

### PREPARING THE EXPEDITION

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| LV Anza to Bucareli, Mexico, November 17,<br>1774 . . . . .                        | 209 |
| LVI Decree by Bucareli, Mexico, November<br>28, 1774 . . . . .                     | 214 |
| LVII Anza to Bucareli, Mexico, December 1,<br>1774 . . . . .                       | 216 |
| LVIII Anza to Bucareli, Mexico, December 1,<br>1774 . . . . .                      | 218 |
| LIX Anza to Bucareli, Mexico, December 5,<br>1774 . . . . .                        | 220 |
| LX Memorandum by Don José de Echeveste,<br>Mexico, December 5, 1774 . . . . .      | 225 |
| LXI Bucareli to Serra, Mexico, December 15,<br>1774 . . . . .                      | 234 |
| LXII Crespo to Bucareli, Santa Gertrudis del<br>Altar, December 15, 1774 . . . . . | 238 |



# CONTENTS

|  | PAGE |
|--|------|
| LXIII Council of War and Royal Exchequer,<br>Mexico, December 16, 1774 . . . . . | 249  |
| LXIV Bucareli to Arriaga, December 27, 1774.<br>No. 1640 . . . . .               | 259  |
| LXV Bucareli to Serra, Mexico, January 2,<br>1775 . . . . .                      | 264  |
| LXVI Bucareli to Serra, Mexico, January 2,<br>1775 . . . . .                     | 266  |
| LXVII Bucareli to Serra, Mexico, January 2,<br>1775 . . . . .                    | 267  |
| LXVIII Bucareli to Garcés, Mexico, January 2,<br>1775 . . . . .                  | 269  |
| LXIX Juncosa to Font, Mexico, January 30,<br>1775 . . . . .                      | 272  |
| LXX Garcés and Díaz to Bucareli, Ures,<br>March 21, 1775 . . . . .               | 276  |
| LXXI Bucareli to Serra, Mexico, May 24, 1775                                     | 291  |
| LXXII Bucareli to Arriaga, Mexico, May 27,<br>1775. No. 1824 . . . . .           | 293  |
| LXXIII Serra to Bucareli, San Carlos de Monte-<br>rey, July 2, 1775 . . . . .    | 297  |

## ECHOES FROM THE TRAIL

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| LXXIV Anza to Bucareli, Laguna de Santa Olalla,<br>December 8, 1775 . . . . .   | 301 |
| LXXV Anza to Bucareli, Laguna de Santa Olalla,<br>December 8, 1775 . . . . .    | 303 |
| LXXVI Anza to Bucareli, Laguna de Santa Olalla,<br>December 8, 1775 . . . . .   | 307 |
| LXXVII Anza to Bucareli, Laguna de Santa Olalla,<br>December 8, 1775 . . . . .  | 308 |
| LXXVIII Anza to Bucareli, Laguna de Santa Olalla,<br>December 8, 1775 . . . . . | 310 |
| LXXIX Anza to Bucareli, Laguna de Santa Olalla,<br>December 8, 1775 . . . . .   | 311 |

# CONTENTS

|   | PAGE |
|---|------|
| LXXX Anza to Bucareli, Laguna de Santa Olalla,<br>December 8, 1775 . . . . .      | 313  |
| LXXXI Garcés to Bucareli, San Pedro de Los<br>Yumas, January 12, 1776 . . . . .   | 314  |
| LXXXII Serra to Pangua, San Carlos, April 13,<br>1776 . . . . .                   | 316  |
| LXXXIII Garcés to Bucareli, San Xavier del Bac,<br>September 24, 1776 . . . . .   | 319  |
| OFFICIAL REPORTS OF THE EXPEDITION AND PLANS FOR<br>SAN FRANCISCO                 |      |
| LXXXIV Bucareli to Serra, Mexico, January 20,<br>1776 . . . . .                   | 321  |
| LXXXV Bucareli to Serra, Mexico, January 20,<br>1776 . . . . .                    | 324  |
| LXXXVI Gálvez to Bucareli, El Pardo, February<br>14, 1776 . . . . .               | 326  |
| LXXXVII Bucareli to Serra, Mexico, March 26,<br>1776 . . . . .                    | 328  |
| LXXXVIII Bucareli to Arriaga, Mexico, March 27,<br>1776. No. 2183 . . . . .       | 331  |
| LXXXIX Bucareli to Arriaga, Mexico, March 27,<br>1776. No. 2186 . . . . .         | 336  |
| XC Bucareli to Serra, Mexico, April 3, 1776 .                                     | 343  |
| XCI Bucareli to Gálvez, Mexico, August 27,<br>1776. No. 2428 . . . . .            | 345  |
| XCII Memorandum of Stock for New Califor-<br>nia, Mexico, August 27, 1776 . . . . | 349  |
| XCIII Bucareli to Gálvez, Mexico, August 27,<br>1776. No. 2429 . . . . .          | 350  |
| XCIV Bucareli to Serra, Mexico, December 25,<br>1776 . . . . .                    | 358  |

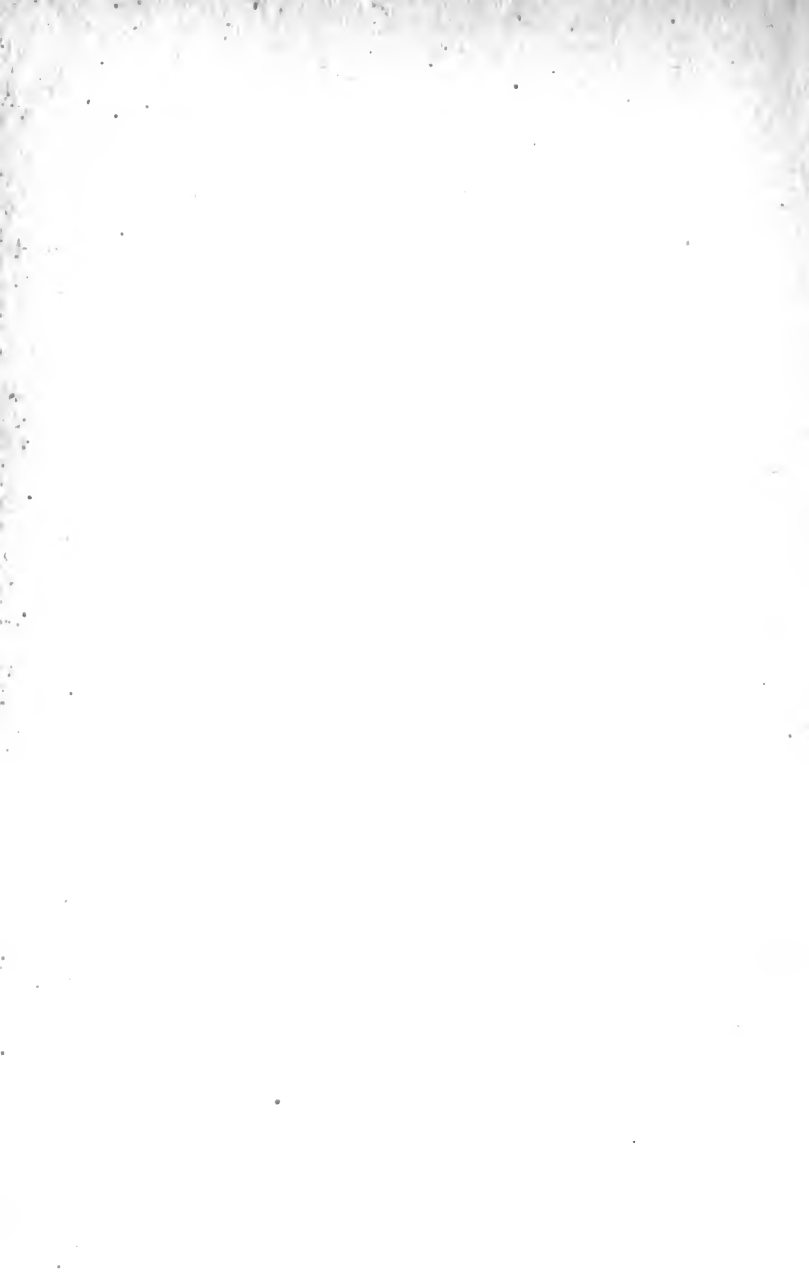
# CONTENTS

| CHIEF PALMA IN MEXICO |   | PAGE |
|-----------------------|---|------|
| XCV                   | Bucareli to Gálvez, Mexico, October 27,<br>1776. No. 2584 . . . . .   | 363  |
| XCVI                  | Palma to Bucareli, Mexico, November<br>11, 1776 . . . . .   | 365  |
| XCVII                 | Arangoyté to Bucareli, Mexico, Novem-<br>ber 18, 1776 . . . . .   | 377  |
| XCVIII                | Anza to the Viceroy, Mexico, November<br>20, 1776 . . . . .   | 383  |
| XCIX                  | Bucareli to Gálvez, Mexico, November<br>26, 1776. No. 2592 . . . . .  | 395  |
| C                     | Gálvez to Bucareli, Madrid, December<br>24, 1776 . . . . .  | 398  |
| CI                    | Gálvez to Bucareli, El Pardo, February<br>3, 1777 . . . . .   | 399  |
| CII                   | Gálvez to Croix, El Pardo, February 10,<br>1777 . . . . .   | 400  |
| CIII                  | Gálvez to Bucareli, February 10, 1777 .   | 401  |
| CIV                   | Baptism of Captain Palma, Chief of the<br>Yuma Indians, and three others of his<br>tribe, Mexico, February 13, 1777 . . | 402  |
| CV                    | Gálvez to Bucareli, El Pardo, February<br>14, 1777 . . . . .  | 406  |
| CVI                   | Gálvez to Croix, El Pardo, February 14,<br>1777 . . . . .   | 408  |
| CVII                  | Bucareli to Gálvez, Mexico, February 24,<br>1777. No. 2753 . . . . .  | 410  |
| CVIII                 | Gálvez to Bucareli, Aranjuez, June 3,<br>1777 . . . . .   | 413  |
| INDEX                 | . . . . .   | 415  |

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

|  |             |     |
|--|-------------|-----|
| A page of Anza's proposal of May 2, 1772.....                              | Facing page | 6   |
| A page of Costansó's opinion of September 5, 1772.....                     |             | 7   |
| A page of Anza's letter from Camp San Bernardino.....                      |             | 52  |
| Father Díaz's letter to Bucareli, from San Gabriel, April 8, 1774....      |             | 130 |
| A page of Anza's report that he has found a land route to California       |             | 131 |
| A page of Garcés's letter from Yuma Junction, April 27, 1774.....          |             | 144 |
| Last page of the Declaration of Juan Bautista Baldés.....                  |             | 158 |
| First page of Echeveste's Estimate of Expenses for Anza's colony           |             | 232 |
| Bucareli's decree of December 7, 1774.....                                 |             | 233 |
| Signatures on the order to found San Francisco, December 16, 1774          |             | 256 |
| Last page of one of Anza's letters from Santa Olalla.....                  |             | 308 |
| Last page of Chief Palma's petition for baptism, November 11,<br>1776..... |             | 376 |

CORRESPONDENCE OF THE  
FIRST EXPEDITION



# THE GENESIS OF THE EXPEDITION

## I

### ANZA TO PINEDA

TUBAC, AUGUST 20, 1769<sup>1</sup>

SEÑOR GOVERNOR AND CAPTAIN-GENERAL.

My Dear Sir: The son of Governor Cojo, of the Gila River, reports that some time ago, when he went to visit the Cocomaricopas,<sup>2</sup> they told him that another tribe farther inland had informed them that four Spaniards had been among them, and that they carried very long muskets and wore long garments. They told them that in company with many others they were going further on, treating everybody as friends, and that they came there only to see if there were any Spaniards near. And when they told them they were far away they said they would rejoin their companions once more and send a letter to these places. However, they say that they did not do so, but instead continued their journey to the north. They say that they told them many other

<sup>1</sup> *Documentos para la historia de Mexico*, Cuarta Série, Tomo II, 117-118. Mexico, 1856.

<sup>2</sup> Governor Cojo was a Pima chief, holding his title of governor from the Spanish authorities. The Cocomaricopas, now commonly referred to as Maricopas, lived on the Gila River below the Pimas. Their language is Yuman, and quite distinct from that of the Pimas.

things, but they could not understand anything except the foregoing, and that even more people would follow them. They say that all the heathen who saw these men are disturbed at not knowing where they have gone in that country, but praise them much because they did them no harm.

Although I am not informed as to the location of Monterey, I presume that they may be people who are going with the expedition to that place, for it can not be otherwise, unless they are foreigners.<sup>1</sup> I have not had the pleasure of hearing this report from the Indian himself, but in order to ask him other questions I have taken the trouble to send a messenger to him, with a little present, charging him that anything else that may result he shall promptly report to me, knowing that I will pay him liberally.

God, etc. Presidio of Tubac, August 20, 1769.

JUAN BAUTISTA DE ANZA.

To Señor Colonel Don Juan de Pineda.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Anza is doubtless correct in his surmise here. This is a good example of the way news traveled among the Indians. The Portolá expedition had reached San Diego in May. Who the four soldiers among the Indians were does not appear.

<sup>2</sup> Pineda, to whom this letter was written, was governor of the province of Sonora, which then included southern Arizona.



## II

### ANZA TO BUCARELI

TUBAC, MAY 2, 1772<sup>1</sup>

No. 264

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

The fervent desire which at all times moves me to serve his Majesty and advance his conquests, impels me to beg of your Excellency, in case you learn that it is to be granted to anyone, permission to make the necessary efforts to see if we can open communication between the port of Monterey and the province of Sonora.<sup>2</sup> This has always been considered as impossible or very difficult, but without the best foundation, for in this region no examination has ever been made sufficiently exact to justify such an opinion. Indeed, there are today plenty of indications that it might be effected at slight cost, although with some effort on our part.

I do not mean to worry your Excellency by recounting reports concerning the matter which your high penetration must already possess, but with the permission which I assume from your Excellency's condescension I will only add to them those which

<sup>1</sup> Expediente formado sobre la proposicion de D.<sup>a</sup> Juan Bau.<sup>a</sup> de Ansa acerca de descubrir camino por los Rios Gila y Colorado para los Nuevos Establecimientos de la California Septentrional. A.G.P.M., Historia, Tomo 396. Original.

<sup>2</sup> This is the letter which definitely started plans for the Anza expedition.

arise on this frontier in my charge. These indeed are the ones which animate me to send to your Excellency this petition; and by reporting them I comply with the order concerning such matters which I have received from the captaincy-general of your Excellency, communicated by your predecessors.

In 1769, the same year in which the expedition was made to find the Monte Rey mentioned,<sup>1</sup> I learned through the heathen Pima tribe, which maintains communication with us and lives fifty leagues from this presidio, and the same distance or a little more from the junction of this river with the Colorado, that the vast tribes which live there had told them that on the other side of the Colorado, at some distance, white men were passing, a thing which they had never seen before. Having been assigned to the expedition which was then being made against the Pimas and the Seris, I reported this news to the governor of the provinces, to my Colonel, Don Domingo Elizondo, commander of the expedition, and to officials who reside in that capital, and, finally, to the Señor Visitor-general, Don Joseph de Gálvez, at the time of his coming to this province that year. In the same year this tribe repeated the story to the very reverend father Fray Francisco Garcés, missionary de propaganda fide, who went to visit it, and who now is engaged in his ministry in the pueblo of San Xavier del Bac, distant from here fifteen leagues. And on another occasion the same

<sup>1</sup> He refers to the Portolá-Serra expedition to Alta California.

tribe has recently repeated the same thing to me, which it never had done before.

To all this it is to be added that this zealous missionary, with the aim of preparing the heathen situated in the northwest and west to receive the Holy Evangel, went in to them alone and with inexpressible hardships in the month of August of last year.<sup>1</sup> Having been at the junction of the Colorado and Gila rivers, he remained on these streams many days, conversing with the tribes who live there, by whom he was well received because of their natural docility. And through the Yuma tribe, which embraces a large part of the Colorado, he learned, without asking, that at no great distance from them there were white people. Those who had chanced to see them begged him by signs, which was the common language, that he should show them the compass, the glass for making fire, and other instruments which we use but which the father did not have, and which, if they had not seen them in that country, they could not have known about, for from this region no one has gone into their land, nor do they come out to ours, on account of the many enemies who keep the way closed to them.

Likewise, they gave this father to understand that to the north and east of them there were also people of our kind, distinct from those whom they indicated to the west, and that some of their rela-

<sup>1</sup> For a brief account of this expedition see Bolton, Herbert E., "The Early Explorations of Father Garcés on the Pacific Slope" (in *The Pacific Ocean in History*, edited by Stephens and Bolton.)

tives maintained communication with the Indians who lived in the pueblos near to those of the Spaniards. These we judge must be those who live in New Mexico, for otherwise, it would seem, they must be strangers.

From the same Colorado River this father discovered a great mountain chain of blue color, and although he did not cross it he thinks that it may be the one which our troops skirted when they went to Monte Rey.<sup>1</sup> And if it is on the other side of the river, as is believed, the lack of water on the way will presumably be much less than has been stated hitherto, because everybody has thought it to be through level country. Indeed, up to now, at least in these parts, we have had no notice of this sierra, and I believe that this is because those who have gone to the Colorado have always inclined toward the coast, and since they did not go up to the north they could not see it.

In view of all these considerations, this reverend father and I are convinced<sup>2</sup> that the distance from here to Monte Rey can not be so great as formerly has been estimated, and that it will not be impossible to overcome any obstacles encountered on the way. Therefore, if all this should merit the approval of your Excellency, I hope that you will charge the president of these missions to grant the

<sup>1</sup> These mountains were the main California range between Calxico and San Diego.

<sup>2</sup> Anza had discussed plans with Father Garcés, who played a most important part in the genesis of the expedition.



los buques enq. se hace Pon cortos y no permie-  
 ten el transporte de Familias para Poblar  
 aquel establecimiento de modo que las gentes  
 q. quedamos en el, y en Monterrey,  
 viven Condenados a un perpetuo è involun-  
 tario Celibato: Al Contrario la Sonora è  
 tierra endonde se cosecha todo genero  
 de granos y frutos; la distancia desde Tubac  
 al Puerto del Sr. Diego no è in moderada  
 como es de, y abierta la comunicacion  
 que propone el Capitan D. Juan de Arza  
 se le facilitara a los de S. Diego y Mon-  
 terey, unos Socorros mas pronto y po-  
 dran para Familias à Poblar aquellos  
 establecim. recien<sup>tes</sup> fundados obra for mayor  
 mayor Solidez que la que oy tienen  
 Mexico 4 de septiembre de 1772

father mentioned permission to accompany me, for I am in accord with him to sacrifice myself to this purpose and to whatever may redound to the service of his Majesty and the glory of your Excellency.

My presidio, most excellent Sir, is one of those especially destined for the Apache frontier, and is the last one toward the Gulf of Californias. I do not expect on account of this petition to your Excellency that I shall be relieved of my main function. On the contrary, I fully expect just as hitherto to continue in the fulfillment of my obligations. Nevertheless, it has seemed proper to beg your Excellency that, if you approve my petition, you grant also, for the time necessary for this undertaking only, for which I consider opportune the month of October and thenceforward, that I be free to take from my company twenty or twenty-five soldiers, whom I consider sufficient to put the plan in operation, in which, with your Excellency's approval, and by fulfilling your wise orders, I have no doubt of achieving the greatest success.

May God our Lord spare the important life of your Excellency the many years which I beg of Him. Presidio of Tubac, May 2, 1772. Most Excellent Sir,

JUAN BAP.<sup>TA</sup> DE ANZA (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Viceroy, Governor, and Captain-General.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Referred on August 26, 1772, to Miguel Costansó, a brilliant young engineer who had been in California with Portolá.

### III

## COSTANSO TO BUCARELI

MEXICO, SEPTEMBER 5, 1772<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

In order to comply with your Excellency's superior decree relative to what is set forth in this petition by Don Juan Bautista de Anza, captain of the royal presidio of Tubac, I will state what occurs to me concerning its contents by reducing the matter to three points or questions which your Excellency might ask me concerning the subject: First, what is the distance between this presidio and the establishments founded at the ports of San Diego and Monterrey? Second, whether there is any probability that the Pima Indians who live on the banks of the Gila and Colorado rivers can have heard of these establishments of ours? And, third, whether it would be possible and useful to open the communication which this Captain Anza proposes between his presidio and those establishments?

To answer the first question and determine the distances between those posts, it is to be noted that the port of San Diego, according to my observations, is in 32° 45' north latitude, and in 258° west longitude, reckoned from the meridian of Tenerife; and the presidio of Tubac, according to reports

<sup>1</sup> Expediente formado sobre la proposicion de D.<sup>o</sup> Juan Bau.<sup>ta</sup> de Ansa. A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo 396.



made by Engineer Don Nicolás de Lafora, is in exactly 32° north latitude, and is distant from the coast of the Gulf of Californias toward the east some fifty leagues. From the foregoing I infer that this presidio ought to be found in 266° west longitude, measured from the same meridian, and therefore the direct distance between San Diego and Tubac ought to be one hundred and eighty common leagues of the realm which, as everybody knows, contain five thousand Castilian varas each.

As to the second question, I may say that no doubt the Indians may very well have with each other some sort of communication and commerce, extending to considerable distances, although they do not maintain it directly because they do not like to go very far from their native lands. It is true, however, that from hand to hand and from neighbor to neighbor they exchange the things which some have in abundance and others lack, and in these interchanges give reciprocal notices of their lands. This I know from experience, for I saw<sup>1</sup> in the hands of the Indians of the Channel of Santa Barbara certain articles which came from the Spaniards of New Mexico, such as pieces of wrought silver, knives, pieces of broadsword, and of manufactured iron, and blankets and fabrics of wool, for they told me they had obtained them from the east where lived some men dressed and armed like ourselves. And so I am confident that the Pimas by similar means may have heard of the people who live in San Diego,

<sup>1</sup> This was when Costansó was with Portolá in 1769-1770.

and perhaps of those at Monterrey, although in this case with more difficulty and confusedly because of the greater distances.

I will answer the third question by saying that since the country is already known as far as the Colorado River, a large part of the journey has been overcome, there remaining no other difficulty than that of seeking a way to the mountains which intervene between the Colorado and the coast of the South Sea. These, indeed, are wide and rough, in so far as I was able to judge from what I saw during my journey; but, on the other hand, some openings were seen, and since the Indians cross them easily our people will be able to do likewise, although it may be with somewhat more trouble, by providing themselves with some tools of pioneers, such as bars, picks and axes, which we carried and made use of on many occasions.

And if your Excellency should find it proper to decide that this expedition should be undertaken, perhaps you will think it wise to have two of the soldiers who have been in San Diego go from California to the presidio of Tubac to accompany Captain Don Juan<sup>1</sup> de Anza, so that when they reach the coast of the South Sea they may know whether they are above or below the port of San Diego and may find their way to it without wandering around.

The utility of this exploration can not be hidden from the perspicacity of your Excellency. The lands of the northern part of California<sup>2</sup> are poor and

<sup>1</sup> It is thus in the document.    <sup>2</sup> He means Lower California.

lacking in crops, and in consequence they can not give the least aid to the new establishments of San Diego and Monterrey. If they have received some supplies by land it has been from the presidio of Loreto, the governor of that peninsula forwarding part of what has been sent him from San Blas in the way of grain and goods. The distance from Loreto to San Diego is three hundred leagues over rough road in the main, which greatly impedes the sending of supplies. The voyage from San Blas to San Diego is long and very difficult. The vessels in which it is made are small, and do not permit the sending of families to settle in that establishment, so that the men whom we have left there and at Monterrey are condemned to perpetual and involuntary celibacy.

Sonora, on the contrary, is a country where all kinds of grain and crops are harvested. The distance from Tubac to the port of San Diego is not excessive, as has been said; and by opening the communication which Captain Don Juan de Anza proposes, San Diego and Monterrey will be able to get supplies more promptly and families will be able to go to settle in those new establishments, giving them another basis and greater stability than that which they now have. Mexico, September 5, 1772.

MIGUEL COSTANSÓ (Rubric).

Mexico, September 5, 1772. To the señor fiscal,  
BUCARELY (Rubric).

#### IV

### ARECHE TO BUCARELI

MEXICO, OCTOBER 12, 1772<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

The fiscal<sup>2</sup> feels that he ought to approve the petition made to your Excellency by Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, captain of the presidio of Tubac, one of those situated in Sonora or Pimería Alta,<sup>3</sup> requesting that he be permitted to go from that place to explore or open communication by land to the port of Monte Rey, for which purpose he requests only twenty or twenty-five of the soldiers which he has there, and that he be accompanied by the very reverend father Fray Francisco Garzés, minister of the mission of San Xavier del Bac, fifteen leagues from that presidio.

This captain bases his hopes for success in his most useful project on the favorable notices which since 1769, the year when the discovery of Monte Rey was undertaken, he has gathered from the heathen Pimas. This tribe maintains communica-

<sup>1</sup> Expediente formado sobre la proposicion de D.<sup>a</sup> Juan Bau.<sup>ta</sup> de Ansa. A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo 396.

<sup>2</sup> The fiscal was the king's representative or attorney in the Royal Audiencia.

<sup>3</sup> Pimería Alta was the country of the Upper Pimas, or Pimas Altos. It included the region between the Altar and Gila rivers. The northern part of this district was included in the Gadsden Purchase. Pimería Baja, or the country of the Lower Pimas, lay to the south of Pimería Alta.

tion with the settled areas<sup>1</sup> and is situated fifty leagues from the same presidio on the Gila River and near the junction of this river with the Colorado, whose vast and numerous tribes reported at that time that on the other side of this last river and at some distance from there, white men were passing, something which they had never seen before.

Of this report or relation Ansa, as he tells us, gave an account to the governor of Sonora, to Brigadier Don Domingo de Elizondo, and to other officers employed in the expedition which at that time was being made against the rebellious Pimas and Seris, and he communicated it to the most Illustrious Señor Don José de Gálvez in the same year, when he was in Sonora. In his petition he likewise adds that these tribes gave the same report to the very reverend father Fray Francisco Garzés, and that now they have confirmed it anew.

To this foundation he adds the journey which this friar made the past year of 1771 in the month of August, and his stay at the junction of the Gila and Colorado rivers with the heathen tribes which inhabit them in the direction of the northwest and west, being well received by them in their conversation and dealings, in keeping with the natural docility of their spirits. And he says that through the Yuma tribe, which embraces a large part of the Colorado, he learned that at no great distance from that place and in the same direction, white people

<sup>1</sup> He means the areas in Sonora then subdued and permanently settled by Spaniards.

were living, and that the Indians who had chanced to see them asked him by signs to show them the compass and the burning glass, and other instruments proper to persons who travel through lands unexplored and unknown.

Ansa asserts also that if these heathen had not seen our people going to Monte Rey they would not have given such signs, for of those who live on this side of the rivers no one has gone to the other banks because of the many enemies who intervene and close or impede their passage. He goes on to argue that the white people of whom the Yumas speak must be our people who are in Monte Rey, because they also gave Father Garzés to understand that to the north and east of them there were other white men, distinct from those who are to the northwest and west, and with whom some of their relatives who live in pueblos near the Spaniards maintain friendship. Ansa infers here that these are the Spaniards who inhabit or live in New Mexico, unless they are strangers, and that the others are our people of Monte Rey.

Assuming this to be demonstrated, and setting forth his opinions concerning the road by which he intends to make his journey, Ansa says that from the Colorado River the same Father Garzés discovered a great sierra or mountain of blue color, which he thinks may be the one which our people skirted when they went to the establishment of Monte Rey. He says that if the sierra is, as he thinks, on the

other side of the river,<sup>1</sup> there will be an abundance of water on the way, which has been doubted up to the present, because it has been assumed that the lands on the other side were plains, for in Sonora the facts have not been known, perhaps because those who have gone to the Colorado have inclined toward the coast on account of this fear, and could not discover the sierra because they did not go up towards the north, which is necessary in order to see it.

This is all that Captain Ansa sets forth in his report, which he concludes by saying that he plans this enterprise in order best to serve the king, and so that the glory of exploring this important road may accrue to the happy rule of your Excellency. For this purpose, if he is permitted to execute it, he asks, besides the twenty or twenty-five soldiers, that the father president of those missions belonging to the College de propaganda fide of Santa Cruz de Querétaro be charged by your Excellency to permit Father Fray Francisco Garzés to accompany him.

The presidio of Tubac, according to this account, is one of those destined especially for the Apache frontier, and is the last presidio toward the Gulf of Californias. For this reason Ansa requests that this petition should not exempt him from his principal duty, but that, just as hitherto, he be permitted

<sup>1</sup> Garcés reached the eastern foot of Cocopah Mountains, but, not seeing the Gila-Colorado junction and mistaking the Colorado for the Gila, he thought he was still east of the Colorado, hence he was not certain that the California mountains were west of that stream.

to continue in the fulfillment of his obligation, since his request for this enterprise calls for his absence from his presidio only for the time he thinks necessary to achieve it, which is this month, and that for this purpose he may be free to take from his company the twenty or twenty-five soldiers which he thinks sufficient to accomplish it.

This petition, worthy indeed of the greatest appreciation, concerning which the present writer will make his eulogy later on, your Excellency sent to the captain of engineers Don Miguel Constansó, who makes a very graphic demonstration quite characteristic of his well-known talent, reducing his report to three points, which are as follows:

First, concerning the determination of the distance between the point of departure, which is Tubac, and the establishments named. Comparing in this way their respective latitudes and longitudes, the port of San Diego, he says, according to his observations, is in  $32^{\circ}$  and  $45'$  north latitude, and in  $258^{\circ}$  of longitude, counting from the meridian Tenerife; and the presidio of Tubac, according to observations of the engineer Don Nicolás de la Fora,<sup>1</sup> is in exactly  $32^{\circ}$  north latitude, and apart from the coast of the Gulf of Californias toward the east some fifty leagues. From this he infers that this presidio ought to be in  $266^{\circ}$  of longitude from that meridian, and that in consequence the direct distance between

<sup>1</sup> Nicolás de la Fora was engineer and map maker for the Marqués de Rubí when in 1766-67 he made the famous inspection of the frontier presidios between the Gulf of Mexico and Louisiana. La Fora made an important map of the Interior Provinces.



San Diego and Tubac must be one hundred and eighty common or Castilian leagues, which consist of five thousand varas<sup>1</sup> each, as everybody knows.

The second part of the report treats of the signs and notices which Ansa relates, and makes patent the uncertainty which should be assumed in the reports received by this captain and Father Garzés from the Pima and Yuma Indians who live on the banks of the Gila and Colorado rivers. He concludes that the questions, the rumors, and the story of the white people, might come to them from the east, that is from New Mexico, instead of from the northwest and west, in which directions are situated the ports of Monte Rey and San Diego.

Under the third and last point it is stated that since the country as far as the Colorado River is already known, a large part of the journey is conquered, there being no other difficulties than that of seeking a passage to the sierras which intervene between the currents of this river and the coast of the South Sea. These sierras are extended and rough, from what Constansó was able to judge at sight when he went with the expedition to those establishments, but he also says that some gaps were discovered, and since the Indians cross them easily our people ought to be able to do likewise, although with somewhat more difficulty, carrying for preparedness pioneers' tools,—bars, axes and picks—such as were taken on his expedition, and of which they made use in many places.

<sup>1</sup> A vara or Spanish yard is about thirty-three inches.

He concludes his report then by saying that if your Excellency grants and permits that this exploration of that route be undertaken, it will be very well to send from California<sup>1</sup> to Tubac two of the soldiers who have been in San Diego, to go with Captain Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, so that when they reach or approach the coast of the South Sea they may explore, and may recognize whether they are above or below the port mentioned, and may find their way to it without hesitation.

The usefulness of this enterprise, he says, can not be hidden from anyone who knows that the lands of northern California are poor and lacking in crops, and that in consequence they can not give the least aid to the new establishments. Indeed, if any has been sent from there by land it has been from the presidio of Loreto, which is three hundred leagues from the port of San Diego, over rough road in large part. It is stated also that the voyage from San Blas to those establishments is long and difficult, and that the vessels in which it is made are so small that they do not permit the transportation of families to settle them, so that the men who have remained there live condemned to perpetual and involuntary celibacy;<sup>2</sup> that Sonora on the contrary is a fertile country where all kinds of grains and fruits are harvested; that the distance from Tubac to

<sup>1</sup> He means Lower California. These soldiers would be members of the Portolá expedition or other soldiers who had later gone to San Diego.

<sup>2</sup> Areche forgets that the government encouraged the marriage of soldiers with the Indian women of California, and that some had already done so.

the port of San Diego is not excessive; and that the communication which is proposed, once opened, will make it easier to succor them more promptly, with fresher and better supplies at less cost, thus making it possible for families of settlers to go to them, and giving them greater stability than they have at present.

Your Excellency has now heard a full summary of the petition of Ansa and of the report by Constansó, and there remains but little to be added by the present writer concerning the utility of this enterprise, or the orders which ought to be given and directed to its fulfillment. Ansa merely requests that he be permitted to take twenty or twenty-five of the men in the force at his presidio, without adding any other costs to the royal exchequer, for the rest of the expenses of the expedition he takes upon himself, in order to win the reward for the ardent desire which prompts him to open communication through that region with San Diego and Monte Rey.

This being assumed, the fiscal does not doubt that the twenty or twenty-five men ought to be granted him, in order that they may accompany him on his journey, and that for this purpose and for the one stated by Constansó, the appropriate order should be given to the effect that he shall be accompanied by two of the men now in Loreto, in Californias,<sup>1</sup> who went on the last expedition by land. In

<sup>1</sup> In Lower California. Californias was a term frequently applied to both of the Californias.

the same way, another dispatch should be sent by charge and entreaty<sup>1</sup> to the very reverend father president of the missions of Sonora, that he permit Father Fray Francisco Garzés to go on the expedition with Captain Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, to whom these measures will be dispatched; and another that he carry with him pioneers' tools, such as bars, axes, picks and others which may be necessary to accomplish his design; finally, assuring him that he has been given this hearty approval, in the confidence that he will know how to merit it by the greatest zeal, not to mention his well-known conduct and his most noble ambition for the good service of the king and for the advantages which may accrue to those establishments which he intends to seek by the new expedition.

The plan of this captain is laudable, and his spirit corresponds to the signs of his honor given by his report, and to the energy with which he desires to make himself more useful to the state and to the administration of your Excellency. And for this purpose, and to stimulate his spirit, it appears to be proper that he be given to understand this by your Excellency, you promising to present his honorable petition to the sovereign intelligence of the king, with the appropriate report in his favor, so that if it be his royal will he may reward him, as is to be expected from the king's natural generosity and the appreciation with which he regards the good and just service of his vassals.

<sup>1</sup> The royal officials seldom issued orders to the friars, but requested them "by charge and entreaty" (*de ruego y encargo*).

The fiscal purposely omits speaking of the distance from the presidio of Tubac to San Diego and of that from Loreto in Californias to the same point, for it is made clear in the summary and in the report by Constansó. Likewise he omits a discussion of the advantages which will result if the projected enterprise is carried out, since they are clearly presented in this file of documents,<sup>1</sup> and are made clearer to the comprehension by the reports given by those who made the slow, difficult, and toilsome expedition by sea and land to seek the ports of San Diego, Monte Rey, and San Francisco, on the coast of the South Sea.

This exploration having been made, and the road being found, it may be of great value to the new missions and to the soldiers who constitute their convoy or guard. Sonora will likewise have there for some time a market for its produce while the new establishments are being settled, if indeed their lands are fit to produce them, as is asserted by the reports of those expeditions; and in the task of maintaining them the royal exchequer will gradually be relieved of the heavy expenses which it would have by supporting them either by sea from San Blas or by land from Loreto, in Californias, which is distant three hundred leagues over bad and rough roads from the first settlement.

In this belief, it remains for the fiscal only to note that the presidio of Don Juan Bautista de Ansa is especially designed to combat, repel, and

<sup>1</sup> *Expediente* is the term used here. This word means a file of documents relating to a particular subject or item of business.

defend the frontier of the hostile Apaches, and is the last one in Sonora in the direction of the Gulf, and that if its forces are dismembered that country will not be protected while he is undertaking and making his journey. This tribe, indeed, ought to have on the frontier someone to intimidate it and to carry on the war in which it is always engaged; and notwithstanding that the heathen Pimas and Yumas at present give no cause for alarm, on account of the peace and communication which they maintain with the settled districts, it appears proper that this presidio should remain with the same force, by substituting for the twenty-three men who will be withdrawn, an equal number raised from the militia or the citizenry; and that these, for the time which they may serve, should be given suitable pay from the royal treasury. For this purpose the appropriate order should be given Captain Ansa, who will be reimbursed at the proper time, charging him to leave his presidio with the best force possible, so that its operations may supplement those now being undertaken in Chiguagua<sup>1</sup> by Lieutenant-colonel Don Hugo de O'Conór. This will remove the only cause or obstacle which might obstruct this petition, since this increase of pay is of slight importance and ought to be risked for the purpose in view.

In the mind of him who is making this reply other very important reflections that might be made in favor of this plan are unnecessary, for, your

<sup>1</sup> Chihuahua, some two hundred miles south of El Paso, is now the principal city and capital of the state of Chihuahua.

Excellency knowing them with that talent and that penetration which are not common to everybody, it would only be a great weariness to you if I were to set them forth. Therefore, it appears best to close now, in the hope that during your most just rule we shall achieve the opening of communication from Sonora with the new establishments which we have on the south coast in this region.

In the dispatch sent in answer to Don Juan Bautista de Ansa he may be told, in addition, that he must try in his expedition or journey to leave with the tribes which intervene the good impressions which are to be desired, he and his men treating them with affability and kindness, and not giving them the slightest cause for offense, in order that they themselves may assist him in the enterprise, and enhance the security of the road if it is opened. This admonition is very important. And in order that the captain may have all the appreciation which is merited by his honor, your Excellency will say to him that a successful outcome will be very much esteemed by you, as you will cause him to see when the results are communicated and made known to you, when you will ask the king for a reward suitable to his merit. Mexico, October 12, 1772.

ARECHE (Rubric).

Mexico, October 13, 1772. Let there be attached to this file a certified copy of the letter which exists in my Secretaría de Cámara y Virreynato, written

by Don Juan Bautista de Ansa,<sup>1</sup> captain of the presidio of Santa Rosa de Corodeguache under date of the 14th of January, 1737, requesting permission from the most illustrious and most excellent Señor Don Juan Antonio Vizarrón, then viceroy of this kingdom, to undertake an exploration of the Colorado River; and then let all be sent to the office of my Superior Government, in order that the appropriate summary be made and referred to a council of war and exchequer called for Saturday, the 17th of the present month, at ten o'clock in the morning.

BUCARELY (Rubric).

The copy was made and added to this file (Rubric).

<sup>1</sup> The father of Anza. His presidio of Santa Rosa de Corodeguache was southeast of Tubac.



## COUNCIL OF WAR AND ROYAL EXCHEQUER

MEXICO, OCTOBER 17, 1772<sup>1</sup>

Council of war and Royal Exchequer<sup>2</sup> which was ordered convoked and held today by the Most Excellent Señor Frey Don Antonio María de Bucareli y Ursua, Henestrosa, Laso de la Vega, Villasis y Córdova, Comendador de la Bobeda de Toro in the Order of San Juan, lieutenant-general in the royal armies of his Majesty, viceroy, governor, and captain-general of this New Spain, president of its royal audiencia, superintendent-general of the royal exchequer, president of the board of tobaccos, guardian of this branch, subdelegate-general of the new department of maritime mails in this realm, etc.

There were present the gentlemen Don Domingo Valcárcel y Formento, of the Order of Santiago, and Don Joseph Rodríguez del Toro of the Order of Calatrava, both of the council of his Majesty, the first being in the royal and supreme council of the Indies, oidor decano of this royal audiencia, and auditor-general of war, and the second being sub-decano of the said royal audiencia, juez conservador

<sup>1</sup> Expediente formado sobre la proposicion de D.<sup>a</sup> Juan Bau.<sup>ta</sup> de Ansa. A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo 396.

<sup>2</sup> *Junta de Guerra y Real Hacienda* is the term used here. This body was called together by the viceroy to consider serious matters involving military affairs and the expenditure of money. The composition of the present council and its procedure are quite typical.

of the properties and rents of this most noble city, and privativo of the royal drainage canal of Huehuetoca; Señor Don Joseph Antonio de Areche, of the same council, and fiscal in the aforesaid royal audiencia; the gentlemen Don Juan Chrisóstomo de Barroeta, of the council of his Majesty in the branch of the exchequer, and Don Santiago Abad, the former being regent and the latter contador of the chief table of the tribunal and royal audiencia of accounts of this New Spain; Don Pedro Toral Valdez, contador; Don Juan Antonio Gutiérrez de Herrera, factor, veedor, and proveedor, and Don Fernando Mesía, treasurer, both being officials of the royal exchequer and treasury of this court; Don Fernando Mangino, contador general of the royal tributes; and Don Juan Antonio de Arze y Arroyo, contador general of the royal alcabalas.

A statement was made of the petition of Don Juan Baptista de Anza, captain of the royal presidio of Tubac, which is situated in Pimería Alta, dated the 2d of May of the present year, that he be permitted to go to explore or open communication by land from that presidio to the port of Monterrey, in company with the very reverend father Fray Francisco Garcés, minister of the mission of San Xavier del Bac, taking twenty or twenty-five soldiers of the presidio of Tubac. This petition was made because of the reports which, after the expedition of Monterrey was made in the year 1769, Anza got from the Pima tribe, to the effect that on the other side of the Colorado River, at some

distance, white men were passing, and because the same report had been given to this father minister missionary, Fray Francisco Garcés, who in August of last year introduced himself among the heathen living to the northwest and west, as far as the junction of the Gila and Colorado rivers. There he conversed with the heathen tribes and was well received, on account of their natural docility, and he learned from the Yuma Indians that west of their country there were white people, and others toward the north and east, although distinct from the former. To their country no one has gone on account of the many enemies who block the way for them, but some relatives of theirs<sup>1</sup> to the north and east communicate with the Indians who live in the pueblos near the Spaniards. And finally, this Father Garcés discovered, from the Colorado River, a large, blue sierra which he believes to be the one skirted by our troops when they went to Monterrey, and, if it is on the other side of the river, it is to be presumed that the lack of water on the way is less than has been supposed, and therefore Anza is persuaded that the distance from Tubac to Monterrey is not so great nor so impossible of being conquered.

A statement was likewise given of the report by Engineer Don Miguel Costansó, in which he sets forth the degrees of longitude and of north latitude between the presidio of Tubac and the establish-

<sup>1</sup> An error has been made here by the council scribe by putting "de los Españoles" out of position. The Seville copy reads the same. The meaning is clearly as translated.

ments at the ports of San Diego and Monterrey, concluding as a result that the direct distance between San Diego and Tubac must be one hundred and eighty common leagues of the realm, and that the Pima Indians of the Gila and Colorado rivers maintain among themselves communication and commerce extending to a considerable distance. And since the country as far as the Colorado River is already known, he regards as already conquered a great part of the difficulty in seeking a passage to the sierras<sup>1</sup> which intervene between this river and the coast of the South Sea, a passage which when opened will facilitate prompt succor for Monterrey and San Diego and make possible the settlement of those recent establishments.

An account was likewise given of what was asked by the fiscal of his Majesty in his reply of the 12th of the present month. Taking into consideration the advantages that may result from this enterprise, and the lack of expense to the royal exchequer (for Anza only asks for twenty or twenty-five soldiers of the presidio of Tubac to accompany him and this without failing to care for the presidio in his command), he does not oppose the petition, but on the contrary he requests that the captain be permitted to undertake the enterprise which he proposes.

A report was also made of the letter of Captain Don Juan Baptista de Anza, father of the present captain, dated the 14th of January of the year 1737, which his Excellency ordered added to the expe-

<sup>1</sup> The document here reads *cercanías* for *serranías*.

diente. It tells of the discovery of the nuggets and planks of virgin silver in Pimería Alta in the country of the Pimas, and relates that many years ago when the missionary regulars made various journeys to the Gila River and the coast of the sea, they discovered several villages of Indians desirous of accepting our Holy Faith; that fifteen leagues from the presidio of Janos there are edifices as large as the palace at Madrid;<sup>1</sup> and that the Pima Indians in general are obedient, of good disposition, and industrious. For these reasons this Captain Anza presented his opinions and ideas, with a view to getting permission to go into those remote lands, proposing for his part to assist with some horses, cattle, mules and little gifts for the Indians, and all the rest which is set forth, and concerning which an opinion was obtained from the señor auditor-general, who at the time was Don Juan Oliban Revolledo, his opinion being set down literally.

And finally, account was given of the royal cédula dated at Aranjuez on June 13th of the year 1738, in which his Majesty refers to the letter of September 15 of the preceding year from the most excellent and most illustrious viceroy, who then was Don Juan Antonio de Vizarrón, giving an account, with a certified copy, of what had been reported to him by the captain of the presidio of Coro de Guachi, concerning the amount of silver which, in different nuggets and a slab weighing

<sup>1</sup> The reference is probably to the Casas Grandes in Chihuahua, although the distance given is evidently too short.

thirty quintals, had been found among the Pimas Altos,<sup>1</sup> of which he sent a sample and the record of the investigation which was made in this city. Because there was disagreement in the opinions of the assayers and miners it was not possible to decide whether it was treasure hidden since ancient times or a natural vein of minerals, so a commission was given to that captain to proceed to new, formal, and exact investigations. These having been considered in the royal and supreme council of the Indies, together with a letter by the same Captain Anza, which accompanied a copy of the representation which for this purpose had been made by the said most excellent and most illustrious viceroy, of the measures and means which would make easy the journey to that region to explore the unknown lands as far as the Colorado River, and the advantages which would follow to the services of God and of his Majesty, the king deigned to decide to make known the anxiety with which he was waiting to learn the truth of everything, and to order that his Excellency, being informed and assured of the event, its nature and circumstances, should report to him, at the same time not omitting to continue the efforts looking to the protection and care of the royal interests and other things, of which a literal account was given.

Having conferred and deliberated with the appropriate maturity, it was resolved in common accord that with respect to the proposal of the

<sup>1</sup> Upper Pimas.

captain of the royal presidio of Tubac, Don Juan Baptista de Anza, the very reverend father minister of the mission of San Xavier del Bac, Fray Francisco Garcés, be requested and charged to report what might occur to him in the affair, since by his zeal and application to the spiritual conquest of souls he has succeeded in going inland to those lands, and since from him there have been acquired some special reports both of the docility of the Yuma and Pima Indians as well as of the fruitfulness of their lands; and that at the same time he be asked to send the diary which so many times his Excellency has requested him to send; that to the governor of Sonora there be sent a certified copy of the petition of Captain Anza, in order that, previously inquiring from intelligent and experienced persons, he shall set forth to his Excellency whatever may occur to him concerning the matter, stating in detail whether the enterprise proposed by Captain Anza will have any drawback that may alter the tranquillity of those provinces, and if so, that he set forth the means which he may think best calculated to prevent it; that to the said captain thanks be given for the zeal, love, and application which he manifests for the royal service in the enterprise which he has proposed; but that at the same time he shall inquire of the intelligent and experienced persons whom he may find, whether the exploration or opening of communication by land from the presidio in his charge to Monterrey will have any drawback which may disturb the peace of those provinces, and they

shall propose to him the means which there may be to prevent it; and with all these and those which his judicious conduct may conceive, he shall report to his Excellency, to whose care it remains to make his merit known to our sovereign; and finally, that a faithful certified copy of this file of documents shall be made in triplicate, in order to report to his Majesty. All of which the gentlemen who comprised the council agreed to and signed. Mexico, October 17, 1772.

BUCARELY (Rubric); VALCÁRCEL (Rubric); TORO (Rubric); ARECHE (Rubric); BARROETA (Rubric); ABAD (Rubric); VALDÉS (Rubric); GUTIÉRREZ (Rubric); MESÍA (Rubric); MANGINO (Rubric); ARCE (Rubric); JOSEPH DE GORRÁEZ (Rubric).

Mexico, October 19, 1772. Let the decision of the foregoing royal council be carried out.

BUCARELY (Rubric).

On the 26th of the same month the certified copies which were ordered for report to his Majesty and one of the petition for the governor of Sonora were made.

The certified copies were sent under date of the 28th of October, 1772.



## VI

### SASTRE TO BUCARELI<sup>1</sup>

SAN MIGUEL DE HORCASITAS, OCTOBER 19, 1772<sup>2</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

Sir: In reply to your Excellency's letter dated the 18th of March, in which you inform me that Don Pedro Corvalán, intendant of these provinces, sent to your Excellency a copy of a letter written by Father Fray Estévan de Salazar to Fray Mariano Antonio de Buena y Alcalde, the father prefect and president of those missions, concerning the happy outcome of the journey of Fray Francisco Garcés, missionary of San Xavier del Bac, to the banks of the Colorado River and the vicinity of its tributary, the Gila, and of the well-founded prospect of reaching as far as Monterrey, etc., let me say that I have obtained the most exact information and, according to it, I beg to report to your Excellency as follows:

1. To the north of Tumacácory,<sup>3</sup> at a distance of twenty-six leagues from this place, is situated San Xavier del Bac. It is the mission nearest to the Apaches and the rest of heathendom, and for this reason it has been almost entirely destroyed by

<sup>1</sup> Lieutenant-colonel Matheo Sastre was governor of Sonora. His capital, San Miguel de Horcasitas, is some two hundred miles south of Tubac.

<sup>2</sup> Expediente formado sobre la proposicion de D.<sup>a</sup> Juan Bau.<sup>ta</sup> de Ansa. A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo 396. A copy is in A. G. I., 104-6-15.

<sup>3</sup> Tumacácori Mission is some three miles south of Tubac.

those barbarians. It has at present a very populous dependency called San Agustín del Tucson, which was formerly a mission, in charge of the Jesuits in their time,<sup>1</sup> although for only a short while. It is distant from the river about thirty leagues going in the same direction. It has only one minister, who, as I understand, moved by a higher impulse, with no other provisions than a little pinole, a little chocolate, and a few strips of jerked beef, and with no other escort than his guardian angel, has made three journeys.<sup>2</sup> One of these was to the country of the Pápagos, to the west of his mission. These people are all Christians, but are without any minister whatever, because they have come to the missions of Pimería Alta, whose language they use, begging holy baptism for their children, and since they have done this for many years they are now nearly all Christians.

This region is very short of water, and therefore is almost useless for raising crops, although it is good for large and small cattle<sup>3</sup> and for horses, because there is plentiful pasturage, but the number of these species will not be very great because of this lack of water. Nevertheless, in this Pápago country it is possible to found as many as three missions, in sites or places where it is possible to plant some crops and raise horses and cattle. I consider these missions very important, because this

<sup>1</sup> The Jesuits were expelled in 1767.

<sup>2</sup> He refers to the journeys of Father Garcés.

<sup>3</sup> *Ganado mayor y menor*, meaning cattle, sheep, and goats.

country is a refuge and asylum for all the vagabonds and Indians of evil life from the missions of Pimería Alta, who, seeking the liberty which they love so well, take refuge in the country mentioned, where they live without God, or king, or law, except that of their whims, because there is no judge, and although Christians they live worse than the heathen.

2. From there in this same journey this minister went to the Gila River, on which that region borders, and on whose banks on one side and the other he saw various villages of people whom they call Gileños,<sup>1</sup> where this minister concluded that five missions might be founded not over eight leagues apart at most. They are so populous that the people who inhabit them, counting children and adults, must be 4000 or even more; and the heathen are so docile that the first village<sup>2</sup> (this one is next to the Apaches, with whom they have continual warfare) has begged Father Francisco Garcés several times to go and make himself a house; and they have planted crops for him that he might have something to eat when he should go, and have come repeatedly to visit him, wishing to take him to their country, which is very fertile for everything, for crops as well as for cattle and horses. The language which they speak is the same as that of the Pápagos and Upper Pimas, and therefore it might be said that they are all one tribe.

<sup>1</sup> People who live on the Gila River.

<sup>2</sup> By the first Pima village he means the easternmost. (See Anza's diaries for name and location.)

3. The second year, which was 1770, this friar made another journey with the same viaticum and escort as in the first. Setting out for the Rio Gila, he traveled nearly north, estimating that he must have traveled a hundred and fifty leagues, passing through a nation which is called Opas,<sup>1</sup> of a language different from that of the Gileños. And although they had never seen any father in their country, he was likewise well received by all, who gave signs of great rejoicing, now by coming from other villages in procession, now by furnishing him the plentiful viands which the land yields without cultivation, and again by many presents, including a little calabash and maize which they cultivate, although in small amount. Their dress is so scanty that they barely cover the most private parts of their bodies, sometimes with skins of animals and again with the bark of trees. It was a matter to be admired that while they wondered at the habit of the friar, he pleased them so greatly that they were not the least bit afraid of him. On the contrary, they became friendly with him, and then taking him to their huts or chozas they hardly gave him time to sleep, so eager were they to satisfy their curiosity. And, because they were very ill with an epidemic, adults and children went to him to be baptized, indicating by signs that he should sprinkle water on their heads. He did so for all whom he knew to be gravely

<sup>1</sup> Sastre writes *Opacia* for *Opas*. Evidently Garcés wrote two words, *Opas ia*, and Sastre misread them as one word. On this expedition Garcés went some distance across the Gila.

ill, and in his very sight several of those baptized finished their earthly careers.

4. In the year of 1771 he made another journey in which, having set out from his mission of San Xavier, he went west, crossing the entire Pápago country as far as their last village. From here he went north, crossed the Gila,<sup>1</sup> and continued to a point near the junction of the two rivers, the Gila and the Colorado, which he could not examine because of the great sand dunes which impeded him. He then went east and visited the many and populous villages which are between the two rivers, with such felicity that although some of these tribes, who are various, were at war with each other, each and every one welcomed him with such pleasure, affability, and signs of affection as would not be expected from such barbarians. The language which they used amongst themselves in these conversations consisted of signs, and with these the father gave them to understand that he loved them dearly, and that his reason for visiting them was to tell them what he had. Taking in his hands the crucifix which he wore on his breast he venerated it, and when they saw this they took it into their hands and did the same. By means of this same language or mode of

<sup>1</sup> It was the Colorado and not the Gila which Father Garcés crossed. In his diary he said that he had crossed the Gila, but later on he discovered his error and corrected it. He descended the Colorado nearly to its mouth looking for the Gila-Colorado junction, which he had left far behind. When he set out to return east he was near the Cocopah Range. The villages which he visited were west of the Colorado River and below Yuma.

explanation the Indians gave him to understand that he was a distance of four or five days from New Mexico, wherefore, computing the remaining distance to the first villages of that kingdom, he concluded that it must be about ten or twelve days<sup>1</sup> from Pimería Alta to New Mexico, traveling light at regular day's marches, while by the road which is now traveled a month or forty days are necessary.

He also heard of Monterrey, and of the fathers of those missions, and considering Monterrey to be west and that from Monterrey to New Mexico it is east, he concluded that by opening communication straight from east to west the distance would be about a month's travel at regular day's marches. From there the friar returned over the same route by which he had gone inland, because of anxiety for his mission, from which he had been absent three months.

5. In this year of 1772, in a letter written last August, this same friar requests of the father president, Fray Juan Chrisóstomo Gil de Bernavé,<sup>2</sup> permission to return to see if communication can be opened between Pimería Alta and Monterrey, and if this is done I think it will be very advantageous.

<sup>1</sup> The MS. reads *leagues* but it clearly means *days*.

<sup>2</sup> Father Bernabé was killed at El Carrizal by Tiburón Indians early in March, 1773 (Bernardo de Urrea to Hugo O'Conór, Altar, June 11, 1773, MS. A.G.I. 89-3-24). Manuel de la Azuela imprisoned the aggressor, and in April went to Tiburón Island to induce the natives to go to Pitic to live (Azuela to Urrea, undated letter, *Ibid.*).

6. As to the threat which Father Salazar says they made at the Yumas, in case they should not deliver up the missionary and let him leave those lands, I have not been able to verify it.<sup>1</sup> But I wish to say to your Excellency that I consider it very necessary and desirable for the service of God and the king that this apostolic minister should undertake another journey, for from it, I believe, according to the disposition of those people, will result the desired end that they may embrace our holy Catholic law, increase for his Majesty the number of his vassals, and consequently as enemies of the Apaches, which they have always been, make war upon them and divert a part of their forces.

7. Likewise, let me tell your Excellency that if it is decided to establish the eight missions which I now propose, it is necessary that missionaries shall come, and that they be of exalted spirit and teaching, as well as that there should be two in each mission. Indeed, I hold this opinion for many reasons, but I omit them in order not to weary the attention of your Excellency.

8. I have taken the measures which have appeared to me opportune in order not to disturb the Indians in the tranquillity which they now enjoy, maintaining with them reciprocally the good faith which they show.

<sup>1</sup> Father Garcés tells us that the Yumas did not want him to leave them. The reference is to that incident and its consequences.

This is everything concerning the matter which occurs to me to say to your Excellency, whose most excellent person, so important to me, I beg Our Lord to spare many years. Royal Presidio of San Miguel de Orcasitas, October 19, 1772. Most Excellent Sir, your most attentive and respectful subject kisses your Excellency's hand.

MATEO SASTRE.

To the most Excellent Señor Frey Don Antonio Bucareli y Ursua.

I certify that this is an exact copy of the original which rests in this Secretaría de Cámara y Virreynato which is in my charge. Mexico, September 3, 1773.

MELCHOR DE PERAMÁS (Rubric).



## VII

### BUCARELI TO ARRIAGA

MEXICO, OCTOBER 27, 1772<sup>1</sup>

No. 613

The viceroy of New Spain encloses a certified copy of the measures agreed to in the council of war and exchequer concerning the petition made by Don Juan Bautista de Anza, captain of the presidio of Tubac, requesting permission to go to explore the Colorado River and open communication by land with the ports of San Diego and Monterrey.<sup>2</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT AND DEAR SIR:

The enclosed is a certified copy of the measures taken in consequence of the petition made by the captain of the presidio of Tubac, Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, requesting that he be permitted to go to explore the Colorado River and open communication with the ports of San Diego and Monterrey.

Notwithstanding the opinion of Engineer Miguel Constanzó, who was one of those who went on the expedition by land to establish the port of Monterrey, and the request of his Majesty's fiscal,<sup>3</sup> to whom I sent it, I felt that this laudable plan, which per-

<sup>1</sup> A. G. P. M., Cor. Vir. II. Sér., Bucareli, 1772, 14/31. No. 613. Draft.

<sup>2</sup> Julián de Arriaga was Minister of the Indies at this time. This introductory summary and the others like it which follow are generally written in the margins of the originals. They are here placed in the body of the page for convenience.

<sup>3</sup> Areche.

haps had its origin in a similar request made in the year 1737 by the father of him who presents it, and which was the occasion for the royal cédula of June 13, 1738, ought to be discussed in a council of war and exchequer.

The council having been convoked on the 17th of the present month, it was resolved in regard to the proposal of the captain of the royal presidio of Tubac, Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, that the very reverend minister of the mission of San Xavier del Bac, Fray Francisco Garcés, should be requested and charged to report what he thinks about the matter, since his zeal and application to the spiritual conquest of souls has led him to go into those lands, and from him some special information has been obtained in regard to the docility of the Yuma and Pima Indians, as well as of the fruitfulness of their lands; and that at the same time he be urged to send the diary which so many times his Excellency has asked of him.

It was also resolved that a certified copy of the petition of Captain Ansa should be sent to the governor of Sonora, in order that, after inquiring from experienced and intelligent persons, he might report to his Excellency whatever might occur to him in regard to the matter, stating in detail whether the enterprise proposed by captain Ansa would have any drawback which might disturb the tranquillity of those provinces, and, in case there should be any, that he should state what means he thinks would suffice to prevent it.

It was also resolved that the captain mentioned should be thanked for the zeal, love, and application which he manifests for the royal service in the undertaking which he has proposed; but at the same time that he shall make inquiry of such experienced and intelligent persons as he can find, and if they think the exploration and opening of communication by land from the presidio in his charge to Monte Rey will have any drawback which may disturb the peace of those provinces, they shall suggest to him the means which may be taken to avoid it; and with all this and with such means as his own judgment may conceive he shall report to his Excellency, to whose care it remains to present his merit to the king our lord; and finally, it was resolved that a certified copy of the file of papers<sup>1</sup> should be made in triplicate in order to report to his Majesty.

For this it was borne in mind what effect the disturbance might have on the not very stable quality of those provinces, in case any opposition should be encountered by the plan, and that it would be difficult, even after effecting it, to keep open the communication without entailing heavy expenses for the establishment of new presidios and unduly extending our frontier.

It was also taken into consideration that of the journey of Father Garcés to the Colorado River in the year just past this government has only a confused report, not having been able up to now to

<sup>1</sup> *Expediente.*

obtain the diary, notwithstanding that I have repeatedly asked for it and that it appears to be one of the documents most necessary for making the decision.

That the opinion of the governor of the province regarding the matter has not been heard, nor is there any other evidence of the agreement of Father Garcés to accompany the captain than what the latter himself says.

That in a measure taken by the council of war and exchequer held on the 30th of April of this year for the spiritual division of California between the Franciscans and the Dominicans,<sup>1</sup> in conformity with the orders given by his Majesty in his royal cédulas of the 8th of April and the 27th of October, 1770, the district assigned to the Dominicans is in the direction of the Colorado River, while the Franciscans are to extend themselves along the coast.

That better results have always been obtained by acquisitions that have been made gently by means of the missionaries than by those obtained by force of arms.

That it seemed uncertain whether it would not be better to await the progress of the missions that may be established by the Dominicans before undertaking the exploration by Ansa, which might prove to be an obstacle to the principal object, the conversion of the heathen who are sought, when they see themselves restricted in every direction.

<sup>1</sup> In 1772 the Franciscans gave up the missions of Baja California to the Dominicans, and thereafter confined their California activities to Alta California.

That the time set by Captain Ansa as most opportune for the entrance, namely from the month of October forward, would not give enough time to hear from the governor of the province, get possession of the diary of Father Garcés, ascertain his opinion, take in view of it the appropriate measures, and learn the present state of the new establishments of San Diego and Monterrey.

That by waiting until next year there will be time so that, after informing his Majesty of the plan and of the foregoing discussion, he may decide in the matter whatever may be his sovereign pleasure. And I trust that your Excellency will thus present it to his Majesty.

May God spare your Excellency the many years which I desire. Mexico, October 27, 1772. The hand of your Excellency, etc.

ANTONIO MARÍA BUCARELI Y URSUA.

To the Most Excellent Señor Baylio Frey Don Julián de Arriaga.

## VIII

### BUCARELI TO SASTRE

MEXICO, JANUARY 13, 1773<sup>1</sup>

The reports which your Grace gives in your letter of the 19th of last October, with respect to the status of the missions of that province, and others which come to my notice regarding the information acquired in his three journeys inland by the Reverend Father Fray Juan<sup>2</sup> Garcés, leave me advised of all their points and occurrences. I will bear them in mind, together with those which I expect will be communicated to me by the captain of the presidio of Tubac, Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, in response to my request concerning the ingress and reconnoissance which he wishes to make on the Colorado River, in company with the friar named, in order to decide in consequence whatever may be considered appropriate.

May God spare your Grace many years. Mexico,  
January 13, 1773. [BUCARELI.]  
To Señor Don Matheo Sastre.

This is a copy of the letter sent on its date to the former governor<sup>3</sup> of the province of Sonora, Don Matheo Sastre. This I certify. Mexico, August 31, 1773. MELCHOR DE PERAMÁS.

<sup>1</sup> Testimonio del Expediente formado á fin de descubrir, fo. 55. A. G. I., 104-6-15.

<sup>2</sup> His name was Francisco.

<sup>3</sup> Governor Sastre died on March 15, 1773, and by his demise Bernardo de Urrea became *ad interim* governor (Bernardo de Urrea to Hugo O'Conór, Santa Gertrudis del Altar, June 11, 1773).

## IX

### SASTRE TO BUCARELI

SAN MIGUEL DE HORCASITAS, JANUARY 21, 1773<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

With the care which my duty requires, and according to the precept imposed upon me by your Excellency in your letter dated the 28th of October, I have examined the certified copy of the proposal made by Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, captain of the presidio of Tubac, that your Excellency permit him to go in company with the father missionary, Fray Francisco Garcés, to explore the Colorado River to see if it is possible to open communication with the ports of San Diego and Monterrey.

Let me say, Sir, that if it appears proper to your Excellency to grant him this permission there is no objection to it, but in my opinion this officer ought to go without any soldiers, accompanied only by the religious, Fray Francisco Garcés. In this way he could make his observations quietly, without arousing any fears which might be caused among the Indians by seeing the troops, which certainly would happen and might prevent the accomplishment of any good results.

If it is only to discover whether it be possible or impossible to open a road to Monterrey, I may recall

<sup>1</sup> Expediente formado sobre la proposicion de D.<sup>a</sup> Juan Bau.<sup>ta</sup> de Ansa. A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo 396. Elsewhere this document is cited as of January 27. This discrepancy has doubtless come from the similarity of the numerals 1 and 7 in the manuscripts.

to your Excellency the report which I made in a letter dated the 17th of last October<sup>1</sup> regarding the last journey made by the Most Reverend Father Garcés in the year '71, in which, after leaving his mission of San Xavier, he took the road to the west, crossing the entire Papaguería<sup>2</sup> to its last village. From here he went north, crossed the Jila, and reached a place near the junction of the two rivers<sup>3</sup> Jila and Colorado, which he could not visit because of the great sand dunes which prevented it. So he turned to the east and went visiting the many and large villages that are situated between the two rivers, with such success that although some of these tribes, who are various, are at war with each other, each one individually received him with pleasure, affability, and signs of affection such as could scarcely be expected in such barbarians.

In this place, according to his observations from signs made him by the Indians, he came to understand that he was distant only four or five days from New Mexico. Therefore, computing his distance from his mission and the distance from there to the first missions<sup>4</sup> of that kingdom, it would be only ten or twelve days<sup>5</sup> from Pimería Alta to this New Mexico, traveling light by regular marches,

<sup>1</sup> The report is elsewhere dated October 19.

<sup>2</sup> The country of the Pápagos.

<sup>3</sup> Father Garcés was far beyond the Colorado River, and not near the junction of the Gila and Colorado. The tribes which he visited were west of the Colorado, and not between the two streams.

<sup>4</sup> In the other letter the word "villages" is used here instead of "missions."

<sup>5</sup> The MS. reads *leagues* but clearly the meaning is *days*.



whereas by the road which is now traveled a month or forty days are necessary. Likewise he heard of Monterrey, and of the fathers of those missions; and considering Monterrey to be to the west and New Mexico to the east of that place, he concludes that if communication were opened directly from east to west it would be a distance of about a month's travel by regular marches. From here the friar returned through the same place by which he had entered, being anxious about his mission, from which he had been absent about three months.

And since there now lacks nothing except to explore that road from New Mexico in the east to Monterrey in the west, and since Father Fray Francisco Garcés has requested of the reverend father president Fray Juan Chrisóstomo Gil de Bernabé permission to make a fourth journey for this purpose, I have no doubt, Sir, that your Excellency will be wise to permit the captain to go also, on condition that he go without soldiers.

This is all that occurs to me to report to your Excellency, whose life I beg our Lord to spare the many years which I need. Royal Presidio of San Miguel de Horcasitas, January 21, 1773.

Most Excellent Sir, the hand of your Excellency is kissed by your most humble servant.

MATHEO SASTRE (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Frey Don Antonio María Bucareli y Urssua.

## ANZA TO BUCARELI

CAMP SAN BERNARDINO, JANUARY 22, 1773<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

Your Excellency's letter dated the 28th of October of the year just past, in which you heap upon me honors which I do not deserve, was received by me today in this field camp, situated on the Apache frontier, to which I have been assigned by the governor of the provinces and of which I am at present in command because Don Gabriel Antonio de Vildósola, the commander appointed for it, has retired gravely ill to his presidio.

For these reasons I am writing today to my governor to ask if he will please give me a few days' furlough, to enable me to go to my presidio to consult my papers there, and to get the other information which your Excellency deigns to tell me I should obtain from persons experienced in the country, in order that I may repeat to you with greater clarity and accuracy the reports which you request, since I have no one in my presidio who can attend to or direct either of these matters.

As soon as I receive the furlough requested I shall carry out your Excellency's orders. In the meantime you may be assured that so far as I know

<sup>1</sup> Expediente formado sobre la proposicion de D.<sup>o</sup> Juan Bau.<sup>ta</sup> de Ansa. A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo 396. Original.

and believe there is nothing to fear from the tribes who have to be dealt with on the way going to find the ports of San Diego and Monte Rey. On the contrary, I think that we shall be well received, and that on the route itself will best be learned the things which your Excellency desires to know. And I may tell your Excellency also that for this purpose the people whom we now have reduced and those who are about to be reduced, as far as the Colorado River, with whom we have some communication, will not be moved to any other action than to manifest their satisfaction, because it is plain to me that this they feel whenever they see and deal with us.

I am sorry indeed that I can not entirely fulfill your Excellency's order at once, so that at an opportune time, which I estimate will be in September and thenceforward, I may receive the orders which in the light of those reports your Excellency may deign to give me, to make a beginning of my project; and notwithstanding that I am about sixty leagues from my presidio and eighty leagues from the place where the governor resides,<sup>1</sup> I shall do everything in my power to dispatch my second report to your Excellency.

But since I find myself in a situation in which everything that I promise is hazarded by distances and risks, it occurs to me to tell your Excellency, with the most humble respect, that if you decide to grant my petition, it ought to be confined for the present to exploring a road to the ports named, in

<sup>1</sup> San Miguel de Horcasitas.

order that I may arrive there at the time stated. However, you may give me your orders and instructions with such restrictions as may seem best to you, in the confidence that I shall never depart one jot from their spirit, and that in everything I shall keep in mind the points contained in your Excellency's already cited letter, by observing which I shall achieve the success which I desire.

May our Lord spare the life of your Excellency in your greatest exaltation for many years. Camp San Bernardino,<sup>1</sup> January 22, 1773. Most Excellent Sir,

JUAN BAP.<sup>TA</sup> DE ANSA (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Viceroy, Don Antonio María Bucareli y Ursua.


<sup>1</sup> San Bernardino was sixty leagues east of Tubac, square on the present boundary of Arizona and near the New Mexico line. It is now a famous ranch and is owned by the Slaughter family. The presidio in Anza's day was intended as a defense against the Chiricahua Apaches. Anza's enemies there were the ancestors of the famous Chief Geronimo's people.

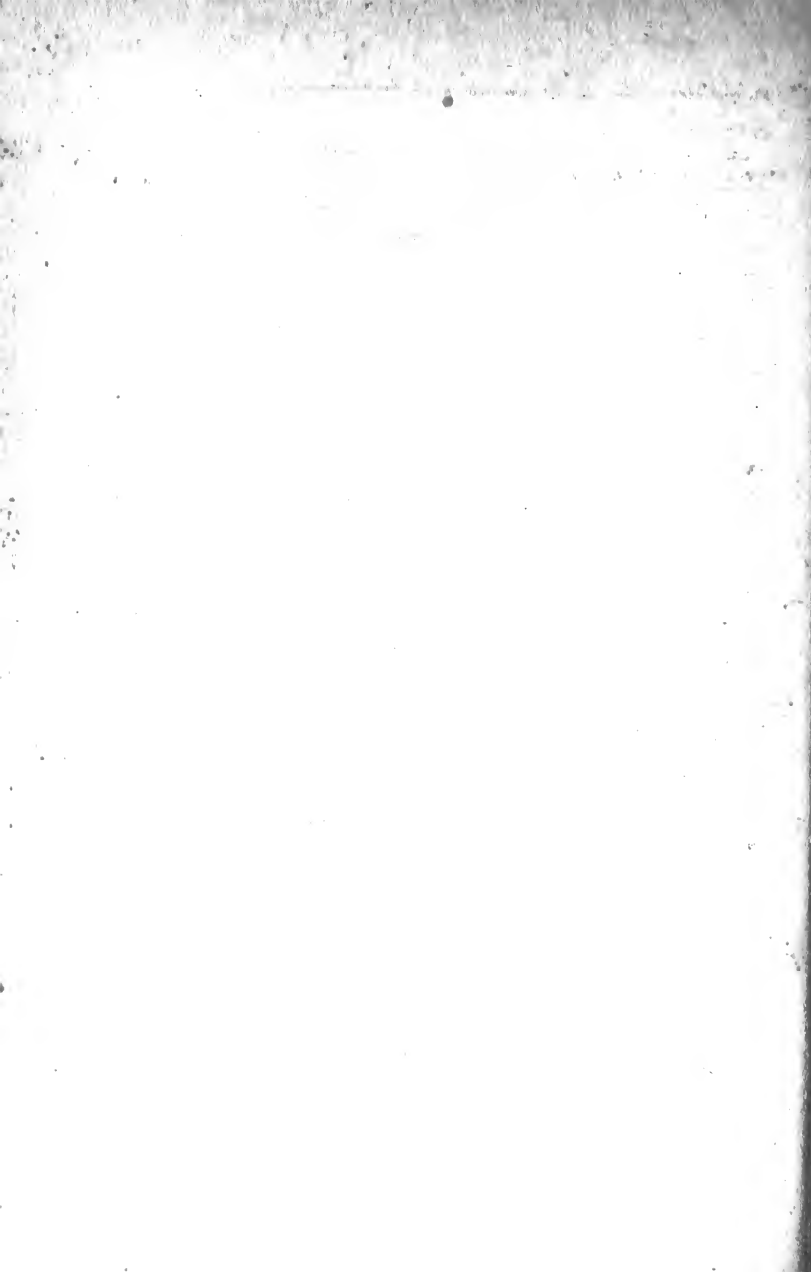
Complacencia porq: me cuenta la tuerca en varios  
y comienza no..

Alas variables, no poder dar en el Día anterior  
cumplim<sup>to</sup> a la Oñ<sup>a</sup> de V.E. p.<sup>a</sup> q.<sup>a</sup> en tpo Oposu no q.<sup>a</sup>  
Regulo el rep.<sup>te</sup> en adelante me pudiesen. con su  
presencia llegar Larq.<sup>a</sup> se dignare librarne V.E.  
p.<sup>a</sup> dar principio a mi solitud. y vir amargo  
q.<sup>a</sup> duto como ffo Lig.<sup>a</sup> a mi Pauv. y Bon<sup>o</sup> Laonde n  
vide el bot.<sup>a</sup> hare q.<sup>a</sup> en mi quepa para dirijir  
mi veg.<sup>a</sup> informe a V.E.

Pero como me hallo en una <sup>1</sup>lucida <sup>2</sup>engaña <sup>3</sup>aven  
dura p<sup>a</sup>. Las <sup>4</sup>avertan<sup>tes</sup> y <sup>5</sup>tiégoz <sup>6</sup>codo <sup>7</sup>log<sup>o</sup> <sup>8</sup>ofreco. me  
parece, hacer p<sup>er</sup>u<sup>er</sup>. <sup>9</sup>U.C. con el mas <sup>10</sup>Reñido <sup>11</sup>Torpe<sup>to</sup>  
q<sup>ue</sup> vi <sup>12</sup>Reuella <sup>13</sup>concedame <sup>14</sup>mi <sup>15</sup>preven<sup>er</sup> q<sup>ue</sup> por <sup>16</sup>hona  
solo ve <sup>17</sup>deve <sup>18</sup>Reuella <sup>19</sup>aduecan <sup>20</sup>el <sup>21</sup>Paso <sup>22</sup>á los <sup>23</sup>nomina  
don. <sup>24</sup>Puaxco. p<sup>a</sup> q<sup>ue</sup> me <sup>25</sup>llague <sup>26</sup>en <sup>27</sup>el <sup>28</sup>corp<sup>er</sup>u<sup>er</sup>. <sup>29</sup>Tiempo  
ve <sup>30</sup>viána <sup>31</sup>darne <sup>32</sup>vue <sup>33</sup>Oño <sup>34</sup>Enu<sup>er</sup>uacion<sup>er</sup>. con <sup>35</sup>la <sup>36</sup>U  
<sup>37</sup>Reuégro<sup>er</sup>o<sup>er</sup>. q<sup>ue</sup> ve <sup>38</sup>parecan. <sup>39</sup>afian<sup>er</sup>ado <sup>40</sup>de <sup>41</sup>q<sup>ue</sup> no me  
separane <sup>42</sup>un <sup>43</sup>Apide <sup>44</sup>el <sup>45</sup>corp<sup>er</sup>u<sup>er</sup>u<sup>er</sup> <sup>46</sup>q<sup>ue</sup>ll<sup>er</sup>. y <sup>47</sup>q<sup>ue</sup> en  
codo <sup>48</sup>canóna <sup>49</sup>prevenca <sup>50</sup>los <sup>51</sup>punto<sup>er</sup> <sup>52</sup>q<sup>ue</sup> <sup>53</sup>conciene <sup>54</sup>la  
<sup>55</sup>ciada <sup>56</sup>Caxa <sup>57</sup>U.C. con <sup>58</sup>cuía <sup>59</sup>Oboen<sup>er</sup>o<sup>er</sup>. <sup>60</sup>Logiana <sup>61</sup>el  
<sup>62</sup>acú<sup>er</sup>o <sup>63</sup>q<sup>ue</sup> <sup>64</sup>apreves.

acurto q. apertores.  
Neste senão brei a praça de V.C. enrou maior  
covalimada m. D. Acampam. av. Bernardino  
y En. 224 2177311


 E<sup>mo</sup> Sr.  
 Juan P. de Anza



## XI

### BUCARELI TO ARRIAGA

MEXICO, JANUARY 27, 1773<sup>1</sup>

No. 738

The viceroy of New Spain encloses a copy of the report sent to him by the governor of Sonora concerning the journey of the father missionary Fray Francisco Garcés to the banks of the Colorado and the Gila rivers.

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

My Dear Sir: The accompanying document is a copy of the report made to me by the governor of Sonora, Don Mateo Sastre, concerning the entry of the father missionary of San Xavier del Bac to the banks of the Colorado River and the neighborhood of its junction with the Gila, which fortunate news I reported to your Excellency in letter, No. 281.

According to the contents of this report, that missionary has succeeded in introducing himself three times successfully among the heathen, visiting the Pápagos, Gileños, Opas<sup>2</sup> and an infinity of other tribes who live dispersed and vagrant in that extensive land. The zealous spirit and apostolic labors of Father Garcés are not only worthy of praise but

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I. 104-6-15. Original.

<sup>2</sup> Corrupted to Opacia in the document. See the explanation in note 1, p. 36.

they also promise to reap the rich fruit of a copious harvest of souls disposed to enter the fold of our holy religion.

This worthy object, and the possibility that communication by land with the port of Monterrey might be effected, obliged me to assemble the council of war and exchequer of which I advised your Excellency in letter No. 613,<sup>1</sup> to decide concerning the petition of the captain of the presidio of Tubac, to the effect that he be permitted to undertake the exploration mentioned. But since this matter depends upon the reports and notices which have been requested by decision of the foregoing council, I am able to decide nothing for the present with respect to the establishment of the eight missions proposed by the governor of Sonora, whom I have so informed, and I am transmitting the report to your Excellency so that if it should be your pleasure you may give an account of it to his Majesty.

May God our Lord spare your Excellency many years. Mexico, January 27, 1773.

The hand of your Excellency is kissed by your most humble and grateful servant,

ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Baylio Frey Don Julián de Arriaga.

<sup>1</sup> This document is printed hereinbefore, pp. 41-45.



## XII

### CARTAGENA TO BUCARELI

QUERETARO, JANUARY 29, 1773<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

With this I am sending to your Excellency a copy of the diary kept by Father Francisco Garcés during his last journey.<sup>2</sup> In order not to fail to make a faithful transcript of it, it goes in the same language in which the original is written. If it had not been for this reason I should have corrected it and attempted to put it in style and language of greater polish, which might make it appear less crude on reading it. Your Excellency will remember that the simplicity and artlessness of that father is great, and therefore will be able to excuse the terms and mode with which he reports any excess which he noted among the heathen with respect to lasciviousness.

I am very much pleased with the new order which your Excellency has given, to the effect that without reply the delivery of the missions of Coahuila and Texas shall be effected.<sup>3</sup> This will make it less

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I. 104-6-15. Copy, transmitted with the viceroy's letter No. 889.

<sup>2</sup> This diary has not been printed, so far as I know, but I have used the original manuscript.

<sup>3</sup> On the expulsion of the Jesuits from Sonora in 1767 the College of the Holy Cross of Querétaro assumed the conduct of the missions thus left vacant. To better direct the work there, their missions in Texas and Coahuila were turned over to the sister college of Guadalupe de Zacatecas.

difficult for this college to provide ministers for the missions of Sonora.

I am grateful for the most agreeable orders of your Excellency, and together with all this holy community I am asking God to spare your very important life for me many long years. From your Excellency's College of Santa Cruz de Querétaro, January 29, 1773.

Most excellent Sir, the hand of your Excellency is kissed by your most affectionate and faithful chaplain,

FRAY ROMUALDO CARTAGENA.

### XIII

## ANZA TO BUCARELI

TUBAC, MARCH 7, 1773<sup>1</sup>

No. 38

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

Having returned in the latter part of the month just past from the post to which I had been sent by the governor of the provinces, as I reported to your Excellency in my last letter, dated the 21st of January<sup>2</sup> of the present year, I sent the proper request to the Reverend Father Fray Francisco Garzés, so that he might come and talk with me,<sup>3</sup> in order that we might carry out what your Excellency was pleased to order me and to request of him. We have conferred concerning this matter and collected the information which we have been able to acquire from the very few persons here who were able to give it.

This reverend father, in the letter by which he is replying to your Excellency, is enclosing for you the diary of the last journey which he made to the Jila and Colorado rivers, by means of which your Excellency will learn of the docility and harmlessness of the people who live on their banks, together with the other circumstances which he sets forth.

<sup>1</sup> Expediente formado sobre la proposicion de D.<sup>n</sup> Juan Bau.<sup>ta</sup> de Ansa. A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo 396.

<sup>2</sup> The date given on the letter is the 22d.

<sup>3</sup> Garcés went from his mission at San Xavier del Bac for the purpose.

And I, replying to the principal points which your Excellency orders me in your letter of the 28th of October last, beg to say first of all to your Excellency that on the present occasion and many years before now,<sup>1</sup> with a view to proposing the plan of going to explore the rivers mentioned and from them to find a road to the ports of San Diego and Monte Rey, I have discussed the matter with the few persons who, as I have said, now remain of those who accompanied the Jesuit fathers who journeyed through that region. But these persons being soldiers not of the greatest energy, and having gone without enthusiasm on the expedition, now have so completely forgotten its details that the reports which they give of their breathless journeys, for in fact it appears that they were made that way, do not serve for any other purpose than to confound and contradict what was written by their own conductors, and especially what was printed in the book called *Afanes Apostólicos*.<sup>2</sup> Roads, sites of villages and tribes, their names, and everything contained in their printed diaries, except the existence of the Colorado and Jila rivers, suffer great contradictions.

Indeed, in the year 1756, when another officer and I, on mounting our horses in the pueblo of Sonóitaj, which the Reverend Father Garzés mentions

<sup>1</sup> See document on pp. 1-2.

<sup>2</sup> José de Ortega, *Apostólicos Afanes de la Compañía de Jesús escritos por un padre de la misma sagrada religión de su provincia de Mexico* (Barcelona, 1754). The same work, edited by Manuel de Olaguibel, was printed under another name in Mexico in 1887.

in his diary,<sup>1</sup> to go with a small party to explore the way to the Colorado, in order afterward to do it with all the troops led by the Colonel and Governor Don Juan de Mendoza, the soldiers named to guide me raised so many objections that the plan was given up. This behavior they learned from their conductors mentioned, who, whenever it suited them, exaggerated their deeds, as is seen by this case. For a poor friar, with only an inferior horse and what he carried in his saddle bags, was able to make the journey in a very few days, and lived among those tribes long enough to learn that those unhappy people, although they are so numerous, are incapable of doing any evil if they are treated with the kindness which is due their simplicity.

Lack of this kindness, so I was often told by Don Antonio Olguín, formerly *alférez* of the presidio of Terrenate, who died in this presidio a few years ago, and who accompanied the last Jesuit who went in to those rivers,<sup>2</sup> was the cause of their turning against our people and trying to steal their horses, as we are told by the diaries of the last expedition, in order by this means to get rid of such vexatious guests. The *alférez* told me that in the villages, or with the people with whom they dealt, whether with bad or good interpreter, all they did was to tell them

<sup>1</sup> Sonóita, now a small village, is situated nearly on the international boundary line about one hundred and twenty-five miles northwest of Nogales.

<sup>2</sup> The principal Jesuit expeditions were made by Kino, Keler, Campos, and Sedelmayr.

that the king would send them fathers, but that for the support of the church, the missions, and the fathers, they would have to plant many crops and labor in other crafts, as was done by those of the pueblos already reduced, from which slavery, being informed, they fled, as is to be expected from any free tribe that is indolent by nature. Although it is necessary to correct this defect in all Indians, it is also necessary to take time for it, for if it is done otherwise it will be an entire failure.

This officer also assured me, and so do other soldiers who accompanied him, that the hasty exploration which was made of both rivers consisted in these Jesuits trying to do it all in one day, so to speak, without guidance and not wishing to follow the advice of the officer and others acquainted with the matter. The officer proposed that it should be made with deliberation, first sending out small parties to explore the routes, so that if one was not favorable, another or others might be sought, and that without loss or fatigue of the whole expedition they could proceed with their eyes open, no matter how long the march might be. But they never did this, and so in the first expedition which was made all the riding animals were destroyed at one time, and the plan failed, for they always attempted it in the same direction and route, as the proponents of the enterprise themselves note. Indeed, it is certain that if they had directed their marches farther away from the sea, in all probability they would not have suf-

ferred such setbacks; and it is probable that, free from these, they would have been free to pass to the other side of the Colorado to make an exploration of the country, and determine whether in that region it was possible to find what they were seeking, or to have learned their error.

I have explained to your Excellency all the above in order that you may know how few reports of desired veracity concerning the matter can be obtained. I, at least, do not give credit to what I have read about it in the books of the Jesuits, or even to what I have heard them say, for as has been seen, the very ones who accompanied them contradict most everything which they tell us.

In this belief, and in the knowledge which I have of the religious integrity of the Reverend Father Garzés, I am convinced only that his reports are the most reliable concerning the affair. At least, trusting to them and those given to him by the natives of those lands, to the effect that toward the South Sea<sup>1</sup> there were some of our people, which was also told me by some friends of theirs a year before the entrance of this father, I was convinced, because of the time and other circumstances, that they were our own people of Monte Rey or San Diego, as formerly I have called to the attention of your Excellency.

Because of ignorance of the country which ought to be occupied by the Dominican friars on the other side of the Colorado, concerning which you deign to

<sup>1</sup> The Pacific Ocean.

inform me, I am not able to say whether or not the missions which may be established on this side will be prejudicial. For this river, although it has been explored only in the neighborhood of its mouth, and that badly, is estimated to be at least a hundred and fifty leagues long to its source. And it appears to be inhabited by various tribes concerning only two of which we have information, the Quiquimas at its mouth, and the Yumas who come next to them, tribes who are mutually hostile and are believed to live on both banks.

But even in case these Dominicans, or any other order, should possess both tribes, when once their boundaries are assigned I do not think that the establishments on this side or farther up the river will be an obstacle. On the contrary, I think that they would be most advantageous, in order that those on the other bank might be supported from this country. For as I have heard, it will be easier to transport to them provisions and other necessities from here than by sea, in which I hear it said they are accustomed to experience such calamities that if the provisions are not received at a certain stated time, they do not get them for a very long time thereafter. I am likewise informed, although I do not know whether he has charged any one with it, that for this purpose and for the sake of the commerce of all the continent, for many years his Majesty has been aiming at this, since once achieved it would insure the greater stability of the ports newly discovered



and possessed in San Diego and Monte Rey at the cost of the heavy expenses which have just been incurred.

I do not think that the plan of going to explore a road to those ports will be a cause for disturbing the peace of the provinces in which we live. On the contrary, I think that it will be to all of them a matter of the greatest satisfaction from the standpoint of their commerce, which, according to indications, can be extended as far as the provinces of New Mexico. And much less will it disturb the heathen themselves, even though missions should be established for them, since they will be administered by persons well qualified, charitable, exemplary, and disinterested. Indeed, besides the spiritual good which will result to them, the temporal advantage will not be less, for it will cause them to live in peace, whereas they now destroy each other like savage beasts, fit subjects of the enemy of the human race, who has them in his power, although it would be so easy to shake off this unhappy and lamentable tyranny which exists in the very domains of the most Catholic and most pious king known.

Neither do I find any impediment to my proposed enterprise through fear that the tribes living on the way would oppose it, for, knowing their harmless docility and their lack of spirit, I believe that they will comport themselves as peacefully as others of their sort where such a thing has been done, although better armed and warlike, like the Pápagos and

Pimas of the Jila, among whom any Spaniard may now live and be served as long as he may wish.

For these same reasons, I do not think it will be necessary to erect missions until the character of these natives is better understood. Nor, for the same reasons and because there is no probability, even remote, that the Apaches will come near to them, do I think that they will need very large guards, and even less the founding of new presidios to sustain them. And if some guards should be necessary, in case the missions should be established at the present time, the presidio of Altar could furnish them, being the nearest, and since now it does not have the major duty to attend to, because the task which it formerly had by reason of the Pimas and the Seris ceased with the expedition made against them,<sup>1</sup> and since it is not destined to alternate with the others on the Apache frontier.

This presidio, together with mine, at the time of their establishment by the governors of the provinces, was founded with the purpose of restraining the general uprisings of these Pima and Seri tribes, and having achieved this, to advance to new conquests towards the Jila and Colorado rivers; but this purpose has been frustrated by reason of the advance of the Apaches, especially to the presidio in my charge, for their irruptions against the others are not a third as bad as against this one.

<sup>1</sup> He refers to the Elizondo campaign against the Seris and Pimas in the years 1768-1771.

Both, I am confident, may free themselves of this care within a short time, if, as I expect, the favor of the Most High blesses the expedition which by order of your Excellency is now being made against the Apaches. In this case, although in order to repair or prevent other disasters which may occur in the future they may remain in their places, there will be no difficulty in taking the larger part of their soldiers for the new foundations, if it is decided to establish them. And I say the same of the presidios of San Miguel<sup>1</sup> and Buenavista, likewise founded with a view to defending the frontier which was put in a state of tranquillity by the expedition made into that region.

It appears to me, most Excellent Sir, that what I have said, together with what is reported to your Excellency more at length by the Reverend Father Garzés, of whose honest, apostolic zeal you may be assured, will be enough to enable your high penetration to decide what you may consider most advantageous to the service of both Majesties, being persuaded that this and no other interest or hope of reward is my intent, for this is what has moved me to present to you my views. And I assure your Excellency that I shall not spare any labor to succeed, and if it should be necessary I will sacrifice myself in the enterprise, notwithstanding that for what is seen to be attainable and advantageous to the royal

<sup>1</sup> San Miguel de Horcasitas, near the Sonora River and two hundred miles south of Nogales. Buenavista was farther north, nearer the frontier.

service there will not be lacking emulation<sup>1</sup> and opposition, as happens in all matters, especially in case the opponents are not the proponents. But whether these or the just causes of your Excellency shall prevail to prevent putting my petition into effect, so much do I venerate your precepts that I shall be satisfied that at least I have offered myself to perform a service which, with many others, I believe to be useful and advantageous to the service of God, the king, and my native country, and therefore of my greatest esteem.

And now that I have merited that your Excellency should deign to hear me concerning this matter, I beg you, if you should approve it, to grant me three favors which I reverently request. The first is that I should merit that, in order that you may better understand me, I be directly responsible to your orders, and that they may come to me next August. The second is that you shall order the governor of the provinces to furnish me for the enterprise the very few things which I may ask of him; for with the exception of the soldiers with whom I have told your Excellency I shall accomplish it, I will myself very gladly pay for the little presents which it may be necessary to give the tribes wherever I may make transit, if the magnanimity and charity of your Excellency does not decide to the contrary. The third and last is that on my return your Excellency shall permit me to present myself

<sup>1</sup> There is a suggestion that Anza feared opposition by Sastre. If so, the danger was soon removed by Sastre's death in March.

at your feet, to inform you by word of mouth of whatever I may see and observe. In this way I can explain myself more clearly to your Excellency, and by this means only, I think, will you be able to instruct me in the affair with the satisfaction which you desire, so that, according to my report you may guide the wise and upright conduct of your Excellency.

This journey, far from being to me a weariness, will be for me the greatest pleasure, and I shall count this favor as the highest which I have merited for the small tasks which I have performed for his Majesty, together with my ancestors and relatives who were fortunate enough to die in the service.<sup>1</sup>

May God felicitate the life of your Excellency in your greatest exaltation and grandeur for the good of these realms for the many years which I beg Him. Presidio of Tubac, March 7, 1773.

Most Excellent Sir,

JUAN BAP.<sup>TA</sup> DE ANSA (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Lieutenant-general  
Don Antonio María Bucareli y Ursua.

<sup>1</sup> Both his father and his grandfather had served long on the Sonora frontier.

## XIV

### GARCES TO BUCARELI

TUBAC, MARCH 8, 1773<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

On receiving your Excellency's letter of October 28 of the past year of 1772, I was greatly pleased with the attention given the proposal made by the captain of Tubac in conference with me. And although I fully realize the fears which your Excellency mentions, yet, obeying what you command and charge me, it appears that your Excellency should grant the just petition of the captain, in whom even the thought alone is worthy of the greatest praise. And how much more so will be the execution of an enterprise equally useful to the Californias, the Pimería, and New Mexico, and still more to the spiritual and temporal conquest.

I will now set forth for your Excellency with all sincerity my reasons for consenting to and approving the proposal of Don Juan Baptista de Anssa. First, I concluded that it was because of my many sins that no provision has been made for these parts where I have traveled; for not even for El Tucson have I been able to obtain a minister, although there was one in that town in the time of Governor Men-

<sup>1</sup> Expediente formado sobre la proposicion de D.<sup>o</sup> Juan Bau.<sup>ta</sup> de Ansa. A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo 396. Another copy, having minor variations, is in A. G. I. 104-6-15.

dosa, and although the last governor and this captain considered the matter very important. Indeed, on hearing the proposal of Don Juan Baptista de Anssa, whose zeal for the service of both majesties is well proved; thinking that the providence of God was making use of the captain in a thing so favorable to the service of both majesties; considering that he is extremely tolerant and patient, generous, and well liked by the Indians, honorable in matters of the service, and of an upright life; and realizing that the enterprise for me alone was difficult, although not impossible; and also that the captain, as he told me, had tried to perform this great service in the time of the Jesuit Fathers, by whose visitor<sup>1</sup> it was not accomplished; and remembering the docility of the people whom I have seen and whom I have heard complain of their worthless weapons; and that if the captain should enter he would take a respectable number of troops well directed; and having in mind the reports which had come in the year 'sixty-nine and those which they gave me during the journeys of the years 'seventy and 'seventy-one (the diaries are inserted here), I did not need to deliberate long on the matter, but needed only to repress the pleasure which I was given by the proposal, from which greater benefits must come than those we think of.

Nor need it be feared that this expedition will be prejudicial to the missions which ought to be established on the other side of the Colorado by the very

<sup>1</sup> He refers to the efforts of Bishop Benito Crespo, contemporary of Anza senior, to effect the exploration.

reverend Dominican fathers, thank God and the piety of the king. For it is presumable that these fathers will go to their enterprise on the California side, and will begin with the people nearest to the mouth of the Colorado, and with the Quiquimas,<sup>1</sup> who are terrible enemies of the Pimas of the coast and of the Yumas, and likewise of their allies. Indeed, it appears that it would do no harm if this expedition should go through lands quite distant, and among people hostile to these for whom the missions of these fathers are to be established. On the contrary, the expedition might do them much good. For if it is made, of course its commander and its minister will charge the Yumas and any other tribes that they must not go to fight with the Quiquimas where the fathers and some soldiers may already be. And if to this undertaking should be added measures to found a couple of missions among the Pimas and Yumas, there is no doubt the missions of those fathers would be aided and would need less protection, for there they could have no other enemies than our friends.

What I have said would seem to set at rest the fear that it will retard conversion, which on all sides is attempted among these people. For, being neighbors and perhaps friends, they usually imitate and do what they see, and so if those people should be docile and they have yielded, there would be less difficulty for those of these parts; and if they have

<sup>1</sup> The Quiquimas lived near the mouth of the Colorado River, especially on the eastern bank.



not been converted or are somewhat opposed to offering their infants and children, which is all that is attempted at first, it may happen that we shall have better fortune with those of these parts, with whose example the others may cease their stubbornness, if perchance they are stubborn. Besides the conversion which is proposed for these places, efforts will be made to put these regions in the most useful and peaceful state possible.

I have no fears concerning the matter whatever. On the contrary, I do fear that if it is not done in these districts the same as in those, horrible injury to these provinces may result. For it is likely that we shall lose the neighboring tribes, either because the runaway Pimas will rebel again, or because by some chance the Apaches may join them, as was about to happen in the year 'seventy-one. Concerning this I give plenty of documents by way of replies or reports, in response to the two measures which your Excellency has issued with the aim of improving the missions and promoting the conquest—an important matter, certainly. But your Excellency will carry this out in your happy rule, because otherwise it will have the same fate as has befallen other projects worthy of the greatest consideration.

It is undeniable that though a tribe submits and becomes domesticated more easily when less remote, it still has its misbehaviors and revolts. For these they beforehand always find the best asylum they can, and I assure you that the Pimas never would

have rebelled if they had not had so many relatives to sustain them.

Oh! how much better it would have been if missionaries had been placed in the whole of Pimería and on the rivers sixty years ago, the king then spending ten or twelve thousand dollars a year, instead of supporting now two hundred soldiers, after delaying so long the spiritual and temporal conquest!

Turning now to the difficulties which the enterprise might encounter with respect to the roads, I do not regard them as serious. To reach San Diego it might be best to go directly to that sierra, or to the river near it; and to avoid the bad road that lies between Sonóita and the Yumas, especially if a large train is taken, one might go by El Atil<sup>1</sup> of the Pápagos and the last Cocomaricopas, in order to go by way of the Yumas to that place. But to go to Monterey I regard it best, if I may speculate, that the journey be made much higher up, by way of the Opas or Cocomaricopas, and their allies, so that we may come out by one of the openings in the Sierra Grande, for it is very likely that on the other side there will be arroyos and people just as on this side.<sup>2</sup> It is certain that from there beaver skins and some very valuable beads come among these people. I do not know whether the beads are stones or snail shells,

<sup>1</sup> El Atil of the Pimas was on the Altar River. Father Kino visited El Atil of the Pápago country northwestward from San Xavier del Bac. This is evidently the place to which Garcés refers here.

<sup>2</sup> This plan of finding a northern road to Monterey was on Father Garcés's mind for the next three years.

or some other marine things. And there are the blue shells,<sup>1</sup> which can not come from the Gulf of California, because the people near it are hostile. Besides, if there were any of these shells in the Gulf there would be an abundance of them in Sonóita, which is only two days from the sea. Moreover, when I asked these people mentioned, who are so far from the Gulf, where they get these shells, instead of pointing south they all pointed west.

Besides all this, I take into account the very prudent instructions which your Excellency will give for the expedition, and I recognize in Don Juan Baptista de Ansa a great fund of discretion to meet any unforeseen emergency, such, for example, as the meeting of Europeans or any other people. And I think the distance is not very great, and that it might be made through tribes friendly to each other. And I assume that there will be interpreters, who, being rewarded and going without fear, will not object to going with us; and that the Indians will be given some little presents, especially when they serve us. For this it would be well to carry plenty of tobacco, because they are very fond of it. Above all, they should be notified in advance, and if necessary I will go ahead. They should be told only that the king is sending the captain to visit them because they are good people, as I have written, and whatever else is necessary to enable us to gain their

<sup>1</sup> It was the blue shells that stirred Father Kino to renewed efforts to try to find a land route to Lower California.

affection, not giving them the slightest cause to fear that it may be to their disadvantage.

If I knew of the slightest reason for thinking the plan would not be for the good of all, or that it would be impossible with ordinary prudence, I should not approve it. This is not discredited by the fact that in the three journeys which I have made I have not tried to get an escort, for it is certain that there was no provision for it, and I would not have entered with few soldiers or with a commander who might have been distrusted by them. But all this is beside the point under the present circumstances, especially since the enterprise was proposed by the captain of Tubac alone.

The diaries have now been prepared in order not to fail to obey as well as possible what your Excellency has ordered me. Your Excellency will not doubt their veracity; at least if there is any error it will not be intentional. It is true that I kept diaries of the three journeys and of another which I made to the Apachería with the alférez of Tubac, and that I sent them to the father president; but because of my bad handwriting they have not met the greatest appreciation, and perhaps they have not been able to understand them. For this reason I have now made use of an amanuensis, which can not always be had in these parts.

Finally, most Excellent Sir, I shall be glad if you will tell me of other doubts that may arise now, to see if they can be resolved, in order that the

undertaking may not be delayed, for it is important that it be carried out at the most favorable time, which appears to be in September, October, and November. And I shall be glad if your Excellency will remember that to carry out what is recommended after the expedition is made, it will not be necessary to increase greatly the expense of the royal chests, for the king has in the provinces three presidios which, if not entirely are in the main ready, expeditious, and free to maintain the communication which is desired. These presidios are San Miguel, Buenavista, and El Altar. The situation is in truth very clear, and I would make it patent to your Excellency if I should chance to talk to you. And it will be better if the orders come sealed and without appeal, because in lands so remote nothing of value is gained by permitting reports by interested parties.

Likewise I see no objection, God willing, to delivering some of the missions of Pimería Baja and the two of the Opatas<sup>1</sup> to the fathers of the provinces whom they call the Blue Friars, or to the Dominicans, but there is no use to think of seculars. In this way our missionaries will be able to advance. Who can doubt that the missions which are not yet in a condition to be delivered to seculars may be in shape to be taken over by other regulars? In this way our poor ministry will be better provided for,

<sup>1</sup> The Ópatas lived in central Sonora. The missions of Pimería Baja were soon turned over to friars of the province of Jalisco, releasing the Fernandinos for Pimería Alta.

the Faith immediately increased, and the Indians adequately cared for without enhancing the charges.

Finally, if any difficulties arise, we must expect very special assistance from Divine Providence, and that both Majesties, whom your Excellency represents, will aid the enterprise in which we all have good intentions. And thus I pray with supreme humility, while I remain begging God to spare your very important life, as I desire, for many years, for great services to both majesties.

Tubac, March 8, 1773. Most Excellent Sir, your humble and faithful servant kisses your Excellency's hand.

FRAY FRANCISCO GARCÉS.

To the Most Excellent Señor Lieutenant-general Don Antonio María Bucareli y Ursua.

DECREE. Mexico, June 14, 1773. Send this to the fiscal with the letter of the captain of the presidio of Tubac, Don Juan Bautista de Anza, and with the preceding accounts, in order that, asking him what he may think best, it may be considered in a council of war and royal exchequer.

BUCARELY.

XV

BUCARELI TO ARRIAGA

MEXICO, APRIL 26, 1773<sup>1</sup>

No. 889

The viceroy of New Spain transmits a copy of the diary kept by Father Fray Francisco Garcés of his last journey to the banks of the Colorado River.

MOST EXCELLENT AND DEAR SIR:

Pursuant to what I have explained to your Excellency in letters, Nos. 281, 613, and 738, I am sending to you the copy of the diary kept by Father Garcés, missionary religious of San Xavier del Bac, during his last journey to the banks of the Colorado River.

The language of this document is very difficult to understand, and I doubt whether it will serve as a guide for making a decision in council concerning the enterprise projected by the captain of the presidio of Tubac for opening communication by land with the ports of San Diego and Monterrey. Nevertheless, I am awaiting the rest of the reports which I have requested concerning the matter, in order to dictate the measures which may be considered suitable and of which I shall advise your Excellency, in order that you may be pleased to give an account to his Majesty.

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I. 104-6-15. Original.

May our Lord spare your Excellency many years. Mexico, April 26, 1773.

The hand of your Excellency is kissed by your most humble and grateful servant.

ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don Julián de Arriaga.



XVI

ARRIAGA TO BUCARELI

ARANJUEZ, MAY 12, 1773<sup>1</sup>

With your Excellency's letter of the 27th of last January there has been received the accompanying copy of the report made to you by the governor of Sonora, Don Matheo Sastre, regarding the journey of the missionary father of San Xavier del Bac, Fray Francisco Garcés, to the banks of the Colorado and Gila rivers, where he happily introduced himself three times among the heathen, visiting the Pápagos, Gileños, Opas,<sup>2</sup> and many other tribes who live dispersed and vagrant in that extensive region. And his Majesty, being informed of its contents and of the reason why your Excellency suspended your decision in regard to the founding of the eight missions proposed by the governor, has deigned to approve your Excellency's determination.

May God spare your Excellency many years.  
Aranjuez, May 12, 1773.

DON JULIÁN DE ARRIAGA.

To the Señor Viceroy of New Spain.

I certify that this is a literal copy of the original.  
Mexico, Sept. 1, 1773. MELCHOR DE PERAMÁS.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Testimonio del Expediente formado á fin de descubrir, fo. 56. A. G. I., 104-6-15. Certified copy.

<sup>2</sup> Sastre's error of writing "Opacia" for "Opas" persisted in the correspondence of the higher officials. It is so corrupted in the text here.

<sup>3</sup> Peramás was the head official of the Secretaría de Cámara y Virreynato, and in that capacity he showed great industry and intelligence in the organization of the official archives.

XVII

ARECHE TO BUCARELI

MEXICO, AUGUST 14, 1773<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

The royal council of war and exchequer, having considered, on request of the fiscal, the proposal made on the 2d of May, 1772, by Don Juan Baptista de Anza, captain of the presidio of Tubac, to set out from that post, crossing the Gila and Colorado rivers with twenty or twenty-five men from his presidio, to find a way to the new establishments of Northern California, and having carefully considered and meditated the distance of one hundred and eighty ordinary leagues which Don Miguel Constanzó estimated with the care which is due, according to the observations of the engineer Don Nicolás de la Fora, as the distance to San Diego, in his opinion of the 5th of September last year, the council decided, since it was not thoroughly instructed as to the difficulty or the ease of achieving success in this enterprise, though it was considered to be useful, that opinions should be requested from the governor of Sinaloa, the captain making the proposal, and the Reverend Father Garcés.

<sup>1</sup> Testimonio del Expediente formado á fin de descubrir, fo. 56. A. G. I., 104-6-15. Certified copy.

They have now given their reports respectively, under dates of January 21st and the 7th and 8th of March of this year. But these opinions and the diary of the Reverend Father Garzés contribute nothing toward what the council wished to know; nor do they cause the fiscal to change the opinion which he gave regarding this matter on the 12th of last October; and so, reasserting it, he asks that your Excellency return this expediente to the same council, according to your decree of June 14th, to see if it is proper to settle this point of the exploration of a route from the Pimería to San Diego and California, in order to send to his Majesty a report of the results. Mexico, August [14], 1773.<sup>1</sup>

ARECHE.

DECREE. Mexico, September 1, 1773.—Add to this file certified copies of the report made by the deceased governor of Sonora, Don Matheo Sastre, concerning the journeys of the father missionary Fray Francisco Garzés, to the rivers Colorado and Gila; of my reply; of the dispatch with which an account was given to his Majesty; and of the royal order of approval dated May 12 of the present year; and send them all to the appropriate office of my superior government; and this done let a council of war and exchequer be called for Thursday, the 9th of the present month.

BUCARELI.

<sup>1</sup> The date was left blank in the copy, but is given elsewhere and supplied by the editor.

## XVIII

### COUNCIL OF WAR AND ROYAL EXCHEQUER

MEXICO, SEPTEMBER 9, 1773<sup>1</sup>

Council of War and Royal Exchequer which was ordered convoked and held today by the Most Excellent Señor Frey Don Antonio María de Bucareli y Ursua, Henestrosa, Lazo de la Vega, Villasis y Córdova, Comendador de la Boveda de Toro in the order of San Juan, lieutenant-general in the royal armies, viceroy, governor, and captain-general of this New Spain, president of its royal audiencia, superintendent-general of the royal exchequer, president of the board of tobaccos, guardian of this branch, and subdelegate-general of the new department of maritime mails in this realm.

There were present the gentlemen Don Domingo Valcárcel y Formento, of the Order of Santiago, and Don Feliz Venancio Malo of the council of his Majesty, the former in the royal and supreme council of the Indies, deacon of this royal audiencia, auditor-general of war, and superintending judge of the royal quicksilver and of the department of sealed paper, and the latter subdeacon of it; Señor Don Josef Antonio de Areche, of the same council, and fiscal in said royal audiencia; the gentlemen Don Juan Crisóstomo de Barroeta and Don San-

<sup>1</sup> Expediente formado sobre la proposicion de D.<sup>o</sup> Juan Bau.<sup>ta</sup> de Ansa. A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo 396.

tiago Abad, the former of the council of his Majesty with honors in the royal and supreme council of exchequer, regent of the tribunal and royal audiencia of accounts of this New Spain, and the latter contador of the chief table of said royal tribunal; Don Pedro Toral Valdez, contador, and Don Juan Antonio Gutiérrez de Herrera, factor, veedor, and proveedor, both officials of the royal exchequer and treasury of this court; Don Fernando Mangino, Don Juan Antonio de Arze y Arroyo, the first being contador of royal tributes and the second contador of royal alcabalas of this realm.

A report was given of the request made by Don Juan Baptista de Anza, captain of the royal presidio of Tubac, in a communication of May 2 of the past year of 1772, that he be permitted to undertake to explore or open a route by land from that presidio under his command to the port of Monte Rey, in company with the very reverend father Fray Francisco Garzés, minister of the mission of San Xavier del Bac, and with twenty or twenty-five of its soldiers, concerning which, in a council of war and royal exchequer held on the 17th of October of the same year, it was resolved that as to the request of this captain, the reverend father minister should be asked and charged to report what he knew regarding the matter, and also to send the diary for which he had been asked so many times, since by his zeal and application to the spiritual conquest of souls he had succeeded in going inland to those

countries, and from him had been obtained special notices of the docility of the Yuma and Pima Indians, as well as of the fruitfulness of their lands; that to the governor of Sonora should be sent a certified copy of the petition of Captain Ansa, in order that, first inquiring of experienced and intelligent persons, he should set forth what he might think concerning the matter, and report in detail whether there would be any objection to the proposal in question, and if it would disturb the tranquillity of these provinces; and in case of any such objection he should propose the means which to him seemed best calculated to remove it; that to the said captain of Tubac thanks should be given for the zeal, love, and industry which he manifests for the royal service in the enterprise which he has proposed; and that at the same time he should inquire of such experienced persons as he might find, whether the exploration or opening of communication between the presidio under his command and Monterrey would have any drawback that would disturb the peace of those provinces, and should propose the means adapted to avoid it; and that with all this, and what his wise conduct might conceive, he should report to his Excellency; and lastly that a report should be made to his Majesty with a certified copy of the file of documents.

Report was also made of the letter of January 21 of the current year, in fulfillment of this decision, directed to the hands of his Excellency by Don Matheo Sastre, ex-governor of these provinces, in

which he says that he is not opposed to the request of Captain Ansa, but that it appears to him that this officer ought to make the expedition without any soldiers, accompanied only by the Reverend Father Fray Francisco Garzés, since in this way he could make his observations quietly, saving the Indians the fears which they would be caused by seeing the soldiers, which they certainly would feel, and perhaps without any advantageous result; and that since there was nothing more to explore now except a road from New Mexico in the east to Monterrey in the west, and since this father minister had requested of the Reverend Father Fray Juan Crisóstomo Gil de Bernavé permission to make a fourth journey inland for the purpose stated, he does not doubt that his Excellency would be wise to permit the captain to go also, provided he should go without soldiers.

Likewise, report was made of the letter by Captain Don Juan Baptista de Ansa dated the 7th of March, in which he tells of the impossibility of getting reliable information, for even when he solicits it from the few persons remaining who accompanied the Jesuit fathers who traveled through that country, their memory of the facts is so dim that they serve for nothing but to contradict and discredit even what was written by their conductors; and so he relied instead on those given by the Reverend Father Garzés, who lived among those tribes and learned that those unhappy people, while extremely numerous, are incapable of doing any evil if they

are only treated with due generosity, according to their simplicity.

Because of his ignorance of the country which the reverend Dominican fathers ought to occupy on the other side of the Colorado, he can not say with certainty whether or not the missions which might be established on this side would be prejudicial to them; indeed, this river has been explored by them only near its mouth and this but poorly. They estimate that it is at least a hundred and fifty leagues long to its source, and appears to be inhabited by various tribes, of which he had information about only two, namely, the Quiquimas at the mouth, and the Yumas who come next, the two tribes being mutually hostile, and, it is believed, living on both banks.

Even in case the Dominicans should have charge of both tribes, once their limits are determined he does not think the establishments on this side will do any harm, but rather that they will be advantageous, since those on the other bank can be better supported from this district; indeed, according to his information it would be easier to transport provisions and other things to them this way than by sea, because he has heard it said that by sea there are so many mishaps that if the supplies do not arrive within a certain specified time they can not be had until after opportunity has passed. He understands (although he is not certain), that for this purpose and for the benefit of the commerce of all the continent his Majesty for many years past



has desired this communication, since, once established it would guarantee the greater security of the country and its harbors recently discovered and projected at the cost of the great sums which have just been spent in San Diego and Monterrey.

He thinks that his plan of going to find a route to them would not disturb the provinces, but that on the contrary it would be very satisfactory to all because of the commerce, which, according to indications, might be extended as far as the provinces of New Mexico; and much less would the heathen themselves be disturbed, although missions should be established for them, since they would be administered by intelligent, kindly, exemplary, and disinterested persons. Indeed, besides the spiritual good which would result for them, the temporal benefit would not be less, for it would make them live in peace, whereas they now destroy each other like inhuman beasts.

He found no impediment to his enterprise through fear that the nations on the way would oppose it, for, knowing their unwarlike docility and lack of spirit, he believes they will comport themselves with the tranquillity of others like them who have executed even greater military feats and alliances, such as the Pápagos and the Pimas of the Gila, among whom any Spaniard may now live and be served.

Report was also made of the diaries sent by the reverend father minister of the mission of San Xavier, one of the journey which he made to the

neighboring heathen on the 8th of August of the past year of 1771, and the other of the expedition which he undertook to the Gila River when the Gila Pimas sent for him that he might baptize their children. In both of them he sets forth the villages and pueblos which he encountered, giving their names and the names which he himself assigned them; the lack of water and pasturage; the fertility and abundance of wheat in some, in others the sandy and marshy roads; the good disposition of the Indians; the peaceful and affable reception which they gave him; and the presents which he received from them; asserting that the conquests and foundations which may be made in those parts will be more valuable than those which may be established in the west, since by means of them commerce with New Mexico will be opened and the pest of the Apaches will be kept from other regions.

Account was likewise given of the opinion which he sent with the diaries, written on the 8th of the same March, setting forth carefully the docility of the people, whom he has seen and heard complain of their inferior weapons, and that if the captain enters with a respectable number of troops, well directed, there need be no fear that the expedition would be prejudicial to the missions which ought to be established on the other side of the Colorado River by the Dominican fathers. For it is to be supposed that these fathers will go to their enterprise by way of the California side, and will begin

it with the people nearest to the mouth of that river and with the Quiquimas, who are bitter enemies of the Pimas, the Yumas, and their allies.

He thinks that there would be no harm if this expedition should go through lands quite distant, and through tribes hostile to those in which missions are to be established by those fathers; on the contrary, it might be very much to their advantage, for of course the commander of the expedition and its minister would charge the Yumas or any other tribe not to go to fight with the Quiquimas where the fathers and some soldiers may already be; and that if to this arrangement be added measures to establish a couple of missions among the Pimas and the Yumas, there is no doubt that those of the Dominican fathers would be facilitated, and would require less protection. Concerning this matter he has no misgivings; indeed, if the same is not done in these regions as in the others, terrible damages will result to these provinces, for it is to be presumed that the neighboring tribes will be lost, because the runaway Pimas will again revolt, or by some chance the Apaches may join them, as was about to happen in the year 'seventy-one.

Coming to consider the difficulties which might arise from the enterprise in the matter of roads, he does not find very grave ones, for in order to go to San Diego the route might be direct to that sierra or the nearby river; and to avoid the bad road between Sonora and the Yumas, particularly if a large

train is taken, it might go by way of El Atil to the Pápagos and the last Cocomaricopas, and thence by way of the Yumas to that place. But to go to Monterrey he thinks it advisable, if it can be done, to go much higher up, by way of the Opas<sup>1</sup> or Cocomaricopas and their allies, coming out at one of the openings in the Sierra Grande.

A statement was also made of what was ordered by his Excellency in a decree of July 14th preceding, to the effect that, putting the letter of the captain of the presidio of Tubac with the preceding documents relative to the matter, it should be sent to the fiscal, so that, after he had set forth what he might think best, it might be presented before the present council.

Account was likewise given of what was said by this official in his reply of the 14th of last August, asserting that these reports and diaries of the Reverend Father Garcés added nothing to what the council desired to know, and did not change the opinion regarding the matter which he had expressed on the 12th of last October; and that, reaffirming it, he begged that his Excellency should return this file of documents to the same council, with a view to settling this point, in order again to report the result to his Majesty.

And finally, a report was made of the decree of his Excellency dated the 1st of the present month, in which he was pleased to order that, assembling certified copies of the report made by the deceased

<sup>1</sup> Through a copyist's error *Opa* has become *Olla* in the MS.

governor of Sonora, Don Matheo Sastre, the itineraries of the father missionary Fray Francisco Garzés to the Colorado and Gila rivers, the reply of his Excellency, the dispatch with which a report was made to his Majesty, and the royal order of approval dated the 12th of May of this year, they should all be brought to this royal council.

Having read the documents above enumerated, and discussed everything mentioned, it was agreed by common accord that the exploration of a road by way of the Gila and Colorado rivers to the new establishments of San Diego and Monte Rey, on the terms proposed by Captain Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, would be useful and desirable.

That for it he should take twenty volunteer soldiers satisfactory to himself, who should make use of arms only for necessary defense, conducting themselves with all the Indians on the way with the greatest friendliness and moderation, so that they may remain attached to the Spaniards, in regard to which Captain Ansa will show the greatest care, because of its high importance to the service of God and the king; that to replace the soldiers who are to accompany him there shall be recruited an equal number, who shall serve for the time which he spends on this expedition, and who shall be rewarded for it by the royal exchequer.

That he ought to be accompanied by the Reverend Father Fray Francisco Garzés, with whom, as so expert, he will take counsel in cases which may arise

for the success of the expedition; and said Reverend Father Garzés shall take in his company another friar satisfactory to him and of good conduct.

That the captain shall not make any settlement, and shall direct his march to the latitude of Monterrey, from which place he shall give a report to his Excellency the Viceroy of everything which may have occurred in this journey, with great detail, as a basis for forming an opinion and for sending him suitable orders.

That the exploration having been completed, the captain may come to this Court to report to his Excellency what may seem to him proper, as he proposes; that the orders concerning this affair shall be sent directly to the captain; and that he shall report directly to his Excellency whatever may occur to him.

That for the aid which he needs and asks, appropriate orders shall be given to the comandante inspector and to the governor of the province, his Excellency making the arrangements which he may consider proper for the happy outcome of this exploration, from which, if it succeeds, such advantages may result, for the better promotion of the new establishments of San Diego and Monterrey.

That of everything there shall be made the certified copies needed for record of this extraordinary though small expense in the royal tribunal of accounts; to send to the captain; and to report to his Majesty.

And thus they agreed and signed. Mexico, Sept. 9, 1773.

BUCARELI — VALCÁRCEL — MALO — ARECHE —  
BARROETA — ABAD — VALDEZ — GUTIÉRREZ —  
MANGINO — ARZE — DON JUAN JOSEF MARTÍNEZ DE SORIA.

Decree. Mexico, September 13, 1773. Let the decisions made in this council be carried out.

BUCARELI.

Memorandum. On the 14th of the same month the certified copies were made as ordered for the tribunal and royal audiencia of accounts, and for the captain of the royal presidio of Tubac, Don Juan Baptista de Ansa.

Compared with the original which I returned to the Secretaría de Cámara of his Excellency the Viceroy of New Spain, Frey Don Antonio Maria Bucareli, to which I refer. And in order that it may be on record when needed I give the present certificate, in view of what is ordered by the foregoing decree. Mexico, Sept. 25, 1773.

JOSEPH DE GORRÁEZ (Rubric).

## XIX

### BUcareli TO RIVERA Y MONCADA

MEXICO, SEPTEMBER 19, 1773<sup>1</sup>

September 19, 1773. To Don Fernando Rivera y Moncada, informing him of the Ansa expedition.

The captain of the presidio of Tubac, Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, requested my permission to undertake the discovery of a road by land to the new establishments of San Diego and Monterrey by way of the Colorado and Gila rivers.

The utility of this undertaking having been considered in a council of war and royal exchequer and its execution decided upon, I have sent the corresponding orders for the purpose, and I am now informing you of the matter so that you may know about it, and also so that when he arrives at his destination you may take particular care, whenever it may seem opportune and convenient, to detach parties to explore the country, with the object of aiding the one which is to be employed in the expedition, if it has the good fortune to be made with the success which is desired, giving me an account of everything that you may do when opportunity offers, etc., God, etc. Mexico, September 19, 1773.

[BUcareli.]

To Señor Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> A. G. P. M., Californias, Tomo 66. Draft.

<sup>2</sup> Rivera y Moncada had just been made comandante of Monterrey in place of Fages, but had not yet gone to his new post.



## XX

### BUCARELI TO ARRIAGA

MEXICO, SEPTEMBER 26, 1773<sup>1</sup>

No. 1097

The viceroy of New Spain encloses a certified copy of the file of documents concerning the granting to the captain of the presidio of Tubac the permission which he requested to explore a land route to the new establishments.

MOST EXCELLENT AND DEAR SIR:

I reported to your Excellency in letter No. 613,<sup>2</sup> enclosing a certified copy of the proceedings of the council of war called to consider the proposal of the captain of the presidio of Tubac, Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, for the exploration of the country between that presidio and the new establishments of San Diego and Monterrey, and informed you of the reports which it seemed necessary to request from the governor of Sonora, from Father Fray Francisco Garzés, and from the captain himself, they taking time to seek the appropriate information, so that his Majesty, being informed, could decide what might be his sovereign pleasure.

The requested reports having arrived, and Captain Ansa still entertaining his most useful plan, and

<sup>1</sup> Transmitting Testimonio del Expediente formado á fin de descubrir camino por los Rios Gila y Colorado para los Nuevos establecimientos de la California Septentrional. A. G. I., 104-6-15. Original.

<sup>2</sup> Printed on pp. 41-45.

I being persuaded of the advantages which might result from carrying it out, not only by securing the establishments of San Diego and Monterrey, but also by promoting the reconnoissance of that vast coast; and since the only aid which the captain requests is twenty-five men, whose replacement for the duration of the exploration will scarcely cost the royal exchequer two thousand pesos, it seemed to me that this matter ought to be considered in a new council.

Before calling it I questioned Fray Junípero Serra,<sup>1</sup> the president of the missions of San Diego and Monterrey, and he considered the project not only possible but very useful, and as a preliminary to other explorations if, communication by land to Monterrey having been opened, use might be made of the troops who should effect it, in order that the coast might be followed and a more careful examination made of the port of San Francisco and beyond it, at the same time that an effort is being made to effect the same investigation by sea.<sup>2</sup>

Since the president of the missions knows the country, because he has lived there two years, for he was one of those who effected the occupation, and who, moved by his zeal, came to this capital to promote what was best for the ordinance which was drawn up for the old and the new establishments of California, and since his suggestion may forward

<sup>1</sup> Serra was at the time in Mexico to fight for the support and welfare of his Alta California missions. This statement shows that his opinion was decisive in the approval of Anza's proposal.

<sup>2</sup> This statement shows that Bucareli's motives in authorizing the Anza expedition were various.

the desire of his Majesty that efforts be made to investigate the new explorations of the Russians, I assembled the council of war and exchequer on the 9th of the present month. There, after an account was given of the file of documents, it was decided to grant to Captain Ansa the aid of twenty volunteers from his presidio, and that, in order that during his absence there should be no lack of protection of the frontier, an equal number should be recruited to replace them; that, not only should Father Garzés accompany this expedition, but another missionary friar also; that the captain should be charged by me with the good treatment of the tribes he might discover, and the rigid discipline and the precautions which ought to be observed during his march; that he should never make use of arms except in his own defence and to prevent an attack; that for no reason should he make a settlement however advantageous it might to him appear; that he should keep a careful diary in order to make a report of all his observations; and that having reached Monterrey he should report to me so that I might give him the appropriate orders; all of which is set forth in the accompanying certified copy.

In consequence of this decision I have issued the appropriate advices and orders. I have informed Captain Anza how agreeable this service will be to the king, and I have notified the new commander of Monterrey of the plan, so that he may be on the lookout and not be disturbed when the news arrives. These are the measures which appear to me required

by the present state of the affair, and until with greater clarity, according to the results, I may assemble the sea expedition, so that, aided or alone, it may learn the truth about the explorations announced by the Russians.

I beg your Excellency to report the foregoing to his Majesty, in order that, being informed, he may decide whatever may be of his sovereign pleasure for the prosecution or the cessation of these measures.

May our Lord spare your Excellency many years.  
Mexico, September 26, 1773. Most Excellent Sir,  
your most humble and submissive servant kisses  
your Excellency's hand.

ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don Julián  
de Arriaga.

## XXI

### RIVERA Y MONCADA TO BUCARELI

GUADALAJARA, OCTOBER 12, 1773<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

Because of the detour caused me by the three servants who escaped with three mules, I was longer in getting to this city than I should have been, and this is the reason why I received your Excellency's letter of the 19th of last month on the 11th of this.

I shall strictly observe your Excellency's orders. I conjecture that if Captain Don Juan Bautista de Ansa persists in his undertaking, he will come out between San Diego and the mission of San Gabriel, and I shall arrange to have the soldiers explore the country in order to give aid to this captain. This, most excellent Sir, is an enterprise which I thought to be important, even when I was in the midst of the difficulties presented to us by the long journey of the expedition<sup>2</sup> and by the poverty of that extensive country, and there was a time when I planned to propose it if occasion should offer, but it having happened before this opportunity came to me that I heard of the pretension of this captain, I was greatly pleased.

But my plan, in case it should be approved, was to carry a summary of the diary of Don Miguel

<sup>1</sup>A. G. P. M., Californias, Tomo 66. Original.

<sup>2</sup> He refers to the Portolá expedition of 1769, in which he took a prominent part.

Costansó from San Diego to Monterrey, reduced to a note of his observations in those places, and to request a person of intelligence who should go in my company to make observations, considering this means necessary not only for forming a detailed diary, but also to direct with certainty my passage from this side to that. Finally, I will await them with the possible intelligence.

I have not been able to get Don Antonio de Ozio to sell the mares and horses in Californias, concerning which I brought an order from your Excellency. The reply which he has made me is that he has asked for aid in that city in order to be able to send men and mules, and that if he obtains from your Excellency the conditions which he proposes he is determined to work those mines, and so he can not sell.

As soon as possible I shall continue my journey to San Blas, and from there I shall report to your Excellency whether there is any hope that the men may be embarked or if I must go to seek them in Sonora.

I beg that our Lord may spare the important life of your Excellency for many long years. Guadalajara, October 12, 1773. Most excellent Sir, the hand of your Excellency is kissed by your most humble subject and servant,

FERNANDO RIVERA Y MONCADA (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Don Antonio Bucareli y Ursua.

## ENDORSEMENT

Guadalaxara, October 14, 1773. Don Fernando Rivera y Moncada explains how he has been delayed in reaching the city; and that when he reaches his post he will order that the soldiers explore where he thinks the expedition of Captain Anza may direct itself; and that Don Antonio de Ocio refused to sell the mares and horses which he has in Californias.

## DRAFT OF REPLY

By your letter of the 14th of this month his Excellency the Viceroy is informed of the reason for your delay in reaching that city; of the care which you promise to observe when you reach your post in order that the soldiers may explore the country in the region through which you think Captain Don Juan Baptista de Anza may direct the route of his expedition; and of the reply given by Don Antonio de Ocio declining to sell the horses which he has in Californias. And by order of his Excellency I apprise you of everything for your intelligence. God, etc., Mexico, October 27, 1773.

To Señor Don Fernando Rivera y Moncada, at San Blas.

<sup>1</sup> A. G. P. M., Californias, Tomo 66. Draft.

## GALVEZ TO ARRIAGA

MADRID, MARCH 8, 1774<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT AND DEAR SIR:

With papers dated December 22 and January 29 of this year, your Excellency sent me, by order of his Majesty, the two enclosed letters of the viceroy of New Spain, dated July 27 and September 26 of last year, the first accompanied by five testimonios relative to the expediente formed in Mexico for the administration of the Peninsula of Californias and of the Department of San Blas, the second by a copy of the instructions given to the commander of the presidios of San Diego and Monte Rey and of the report of persons employed in those two places, in order that, having examined these documents, I should report to you whatever might offer and occur to me concerning the points which they cover.

To comply with the command which his Majesty has deigned to give me, I have examined with due reflection the testimonios and other papers transmitted by the viceroy; and since the points of which they treat are many and very diverse, I shall consider them in their order, striving to be as clear and concise as possible.

Testimonio No. 1 contains a representation made to the viceroy by Fray Junípero Serra, president of

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I., 104-6-16. Original. Gálvez soon after this became Minister of the Indies.



the missions of New California, containing thirty-two points,<sup>1</sup> most of which were decided by the council of war and exchequer held on the 6th of May of the past year, the others being reserved for the provisional regulation which afterward was drawn up and approved, and which I shall discuss in the proper place.

The points set forth by that friar regarding the department of San Blas and the Peninsula of California consisted of asking for a pilot and a pilotín for the vessels; the equipment of the new frigate which was then in the port, in order that it might make a voyage to Monte Rey with the packet boats *San Carlos* and *San Antonio*; the admission into the vessels of the alms destined for the missions; the permission requested by the captain of the presidio of Tubac, situated in Sonora, to open a road by land from that province to New California; the removal of the commander of Monte Rey, Don Pedro Fages, and of any soldier assigned to the missions, solely on the request of the missionaries; the supreme right of these missionaries to direct the reduced Indians; the right of each missionary to choose a soldier to assist him; the establishment of a warehouse for goods in Monte Rey; the taking of volunteer servants and families to cultivate the land; the addressing separately of anything that may be sent to the missions; the sending to various of the missions the

<sup>1</sup> This was Serra's famous memorial, in which he set forth the needs of Alta California. It is printed in Bolton, *Palou's New California*, III, 2-36.

bells, vestments, standardized measures, iron, tools, supplies, and mules which they lacked; the delivery of the cattle belonging to the missions of San Francisco and Santa Clara; the appointment of a surgeon because of the death of the one who went on the first expeditions; furloughs for ten soldiers; general amnesty for deserters; a guard of ten men for each mission; a premium for bachelor settlers who may marry Christian Indian women; finally, that he be given some assistance to enable him to reach his post, and a certified copy of what might be decided concerning all these points.

The council and the viceroy granted most of the points in the decision of the 6th of May mentioned. With this ends the first testimonio, and with this in mind I shall now set forth the points which I deem worthy of some comment or criticism, because the rest of them appear to me to be well considered and to merit the approval of his Majesty.

In paragraph five of his representation Father Fray Junípero Serra requested that there be granted to the captain of Tubác, the most advanced presidio on the frontier of Sonora, the permission which he was asking to explore a route by land to San Diego and Monte Rey, adding that some officer of New Mexico should be ordered to undertake a similar exploration from his capital of Santa Fé, going straight west because Santa Fé is in the same parallel as Monte Rey, and stating that communication with these conquests would result in great benefits in the conversion of innumerable heathen.

The council and the viceroy referred the decision on this point to the separate expediente which was being formed regarding the request of the captain of Tubác, apparently without deciding it. And although it has not come among the testimonios which I have before me, I ought to note here that because of the extreme importance of the object aimed at through those explorations, I promoted them in Mexico with the Marqués de Croix on my return from California and Sonora.<sup>1</sup> And since it could not be carried out before my return to Spain, I now think it very desirable to charge the present viceroy to promote and vigorously aid the plan of opening communication by land from Sonora and New Mexico to the establishments of Northern California, and especially to the ports of Monte Rey and San Francisco, which ought to be made secure at any cost.

. . .

With respect to the remaining points contained in the other testimonios and papers sent by the viceroy, I am of the opinion, stating it briefly, that if his Majesty deigns and it is his royal wish to approve the regulation and the decisions of the council held on the 6th of May and the 8th of July of last year, and the measures which in virtue of these decisions have been taken by the viceroy, this official should be ordered to approve and support the petition of the captain of the presidio of Tubác concerning the

<sup>1</sup> This item adds to our knowledge of the genesis of the Anza expedition.

opening of a route by land to New California, arranging that the same be done as soon as possible from Santa Fé of New Mexico.

. . .

May God spare your Excellency the many years which I desire. Madrid, March 8, 1774. Most Excellent Sir, the hand of your Excellency is kissed by your most humble servant,

JOSEPH DE GÁLVEZ (Rubric).<sup>1</sup>

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don Julián de Arriaga.

<sup>1</sup> Gálvez left Mexico for Spain in November, 1771. Shortly after this letter was written he became minister of the Indies.

### XXIII

## ARRIAGA TO BUCARELI

EL PARDO, MARCH 9, 1774<sup>1</sup>

El Pardo, March 9, 1774, to the Viceroy of New Spain, saying that the king, being informed by his letter of the 26th of September last and the certified copy of documents which accompany it, of everything proposed by Captain Ansa for the opening of communication between the presidio of Tubac and that of Monterrey, and of the reports obtained and the orders already given to that effect, has deigned to approve everything done in the matter.

TO THE VICEROY OF NEW SPAIN:

In consequence of the foregoing reports concerning the proposal made by Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, captain of the presidio of Tubac, requesting that he be permitted to go to explore and open communication by land from the presidio named to the port of Monterrey, your Excellency reports, with a certified copy of documents, enclosed with a letter of September 26th past, stating that the required reports having arrived, and your Excellency having learned from Fray Junípero Serra, president of the missions of San Diego and Monterrey, that he favored the plan of Ansa, your Excellency called a council

<sup>1</sup> Testimonio del Expediente formado á fin de descubrir camino, fo. 62. A. G. I., 104-6-15. Certified copy of a draft.

of war and exchequer, in which it was decided to grant to Captain Ansa the aid of twenty volunteer soldiers from his presidio, recruiting an equal number to replace them; that not only Father Fray Francisco Garcés should accompany this expedition, but another missionary friar as well; that the captain named should be charged by your Excellency with the good treatment of the tribes whom he may discover and with the rigid discipline and the precautions which he ought to observe on his march; that he should never use weapons except for his own defense; that for no cause should he make any establishment, however advantageous it might appear to him; that he should keep an accurate diary in order to report all his observations; and finally, after having arrived at Monterrey he should make a report, so that the appropriate orders might be given him.

The king, being apprised of all this, and of the instructions and orders which your Excellency issued in consequence of this decision, has been pleased to approve everything done in the matter<sup>1</sup> and by order of his Majesty I report this to your Excellency for your intelligence and guidance.

God, etc., El Pardo, March 9, 1774.

[ARRIAGA.]

To the Señor Viceroy of New Spain. In duplicate.

<sup>1</sup> On the date when the king gave official approval for the expedition, Anza was well on his way, having conquered the desert and reached the Wells of Santa Rosa, northwest of Signal Mountain, the day before.

## LETTERS WRITTEN ON THE WAY

### XXIV

#### ANZA TO BUCARELI

EL ALTAR, JANUARY 18, 1774<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

In my last letter, written at the beginning of the present month, I reported to your Excellency the reasons which oblige me to direct my route through these pueblos of the west and the presidio of Altar. I have found here the orders which I requested of the lieutenant-colonel and governor of the provinces, Don Francisco Antonio Crespo, permitting me to complete my equipment in the last pueblo<sup>2</sup> through which I have to pass in this region, where I shall arrive tomorrow and where this equipment will be obtained.

I shall take care to report to your Excellency my journey from the pueblo mentioned to the Colorado River, by way of the heathen who maintain communication and friendship with us as far as this presidio. Notwithstanding the difficulties which have been experienced in finding pack animals, I am carrying supplies enough for four months, and for even longer, I would estimate, if it were not

<sup>1</sup> A.G.P.M., Cor. Vir., II Sér., Bucareli 1774, Tomo 37/54. Documentos del numo. 1389. Official copy.

<sup>2</sup> Caborca.

necessary now and then by way of presents to relieve the needs of the people among whom we pass. For this purpose I likewise am carrying such trinkets as I have been able to find, which, not being in the greatest abundance, will for that reason be all the more appreciated by those who have entirely lacked and lack them now.

Although I have not been able, as I ought, to present to the view of your Excellency in proper form a report of the persons and all that is going on the expedition, on account of my lack of knowledge, I do not omit making the report in the form which I enclose herewith.

May our Lord spare the life of your Excellency many years. Presidio of El Altar, January 18, 1774.

Most Excellent Sir, JUAN BAUTISTA DE ANZA.

To the Most Excellent Señor Lieutenant-general  
Don Antonio María Bucareli y Ursua.



# XXV

## ANZA TO BUCARELI

EL ALTAR, JANUARY 18, 1774<sup>1</sup>

Report of the persons comprised in the expedition which is going to attempt to open a road from the province of Sonora to Northern California by way of the Gila and Colorado rivers, with a statement of the provisions and saddle animals which are being taken for the expedition.

|  |    |
|--|----|
| The commander of the expedition, Don     |    |
| Juan Bautista de Anza .....              | 1  |
| The father preacher de propaganda fide   |    |
| of the College of Querétaro, Fray Juan   |    |
| Díaz .....                               | 1  |
| The father preacher de propaganda fide   |    |
| of the College of Querétaro, Fray        |    |
| Francisco Garcés .....                   | 1  |
| Twenty soldiers from the company of      |    |
| Tubac, including a corporal .....        | 20 |
| A soldier who knows the roads from San   |    |
| Diego to Monterrey <sup>2</sup> .....    | 1  |
| A Pima interpreter, because the interior |    |
| idioms are derived from that language    | 1  |

<sup>1</sup> Enclosed with Anza's letter of January 18, 1774. A.G.P.M., Cor. Vir., II Sér., Bucareli, 1774, Tomo 37/54. Documentos del numo. 1389. Official copy.

<sup>2</sup> Juan Bautista Valdés.

|   |          |
|---|----------|
| A native of the pueblos of California who<br>at the end of the year just past set out<br>from them to these pueblos of Pimería<br>Alta <sup>1</sup> ..... | 1        |
| An Indian of these provinces to serve as<br>carpenter .....   | 1        |
| Five muleteers and two of my servants ....  | 7        |
|   | <hr/>    |
|   | Total 34 |
| Item. Thirty-five pack loads of provisions, equip-<br>age, tobacco, carpenters' tools, and other<br>things necessary.                                     |          |
| Item. Sixty-five large beeves on foot.  |          |
| Item. One hundred and forty saddle animals,<br>including those which will be obtained in the<br>pueblo of Cavorca.  |          |
| Presidio of El Altar, January 18, 1774.   |          |

JUAN BAUTISTA DE ANZA.

<sup>1</sup> Sebastián Tarabal.

XXVI

ANZA TO BUCARELI

SAN DIONISIO, FEBRUARY 9, 1774<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

In the prosecution of the enterprise to which your Excellency has been pleased to assign me I have arrived at this place of San Dionisio,<sup>2</sup> which is beyond the Colorado and Gila rivers and, according to the observation of the Jesuit fathers, is in latitude  $35\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$ . I promised your Excellency to report to you my arrival here, which has been fortunate, especially in the crossing of both rivers.

A day before reaching the rivers I heard that the Yuma natives here were divided between two opinions, one to permit our passage and the other to prevent it. But having come down to them I really have encountered only the first and not the second. Therefore I have made my crossing without any trouble, and even with the aid of the inhabitants who, up to now, have shown entire contentment with our passage through this region. In recompense for their peacefulness and the good passage I have given them presents and regaled them as far as has been in my power, as a result

<sup>1</sup> A. G. P. M., Cor. Vir., II Sér., Bucareli, 1774, Tomo 37/54. Documentos del numo. 1389. Official copy.

<sup>2</sup> San Dionisio was the village of Captain Palma at the junction of the Gila and Colorado rivers.

of which they are friendly to us as well as to his Majesty, for I have given them to understand who he is and how they ought to love and obey him.

Now that the Colorado River has been joined by the Gila, it very well manifests itself to be the largest river between Mexico and this place, as far as I have seen and am able to speak. I have found here an Indian of the Soyopa tribe<sup>1</sup> which lives three days' journey, and this would be thirty leagues, up the Colorado River. He says that in the place where he lives the river divides into two parts or branches; the larger branch is this one, and the other runs to the north and the west, after which he does not know where it may empty into the Ocean Sea of the Philippines.<sup>2</sup> He says that where it divides there are no falls, and that he has heard that on the other side of the great sierra to the northwest there runs a road which our people travel, but that this sierra is impassable because of its roughness and its lack of water and pasturage. I have met here still another Indian who tells me that it is three days' journey from here to his village,<sup>3</sup> and from there five days to the road that is traveled by our people, which we infer must be the one from San Diego to Monterrey.

The people who live on this Colorado River are the tallest and the most robust that I have seen in all the provinces,<sup>4</sup> and their nakedness the most

<sup>1</sup> The Mohaves.

<sup>2</sup> This reflects an old belief then current in Sonora.

<sup>3</sup> Downstream.

<sup>4</sup> They are still a very tall people.

complete; their weapons are few, as I have informed your Excellency on another occasion; their affability such as is never seen in an Indian toward a Spaniard; and their number must run into thousands, for in a league and a half which I have traveled on both rivers I have seen about two thousand persons, notwithstanding that they are afraid of us because of our color and our clothing, which seems more strange to them than their entire nakedness to us. As a result of the inundations their lands are so fertile that they yield grain in the greatest abundance.

By now, according to my former report, I ought to be on the road already cited,<sup>1</sup> but the bad condition of the pack train carrying the provisions, and of the saddle animals, which on the eve of my departure from my presidio were left by the Apaches in the same condition, have not permitted me to advance further. But I hope as soon as I set forth to reach lands more abundant in pasturage than those traversed up to this point, although in order to reach them I shall have to take the same route as was followed by the native Californian<sup>2</sup> who came out from the new mission of San Gabriel, as I have informed your Excellency, by way of these rivers to the pueblos of the Pimería, unless before reaching San Gabriel it is possible for me to take a route or latitude sufficiently high for Monterrey.

<sup>1</sup> That is, on the way to Monterey.

<sup>2</sup> Sebastián Tarabal. Anza had now given up the idea of going to Monterey by way of the Mohaves, but he still hoped to find a route more direct than by way of San Gabriel.

The road which I have followed from the last pueblos of the Pimería up to here has been heavy and difficult for me, but rather through my ignorance of it than because in reality it is difficult, for it will not be so hereafter for anybody guided by any one of the men now with me, and during the rainy season or in winter it will be possible to bring successfully through this region whatever one may wish.

To this place where I now am on the Colorado River the troops of his Majesty have never come before today, for those who accompanied the Jesuit fathers failed to accomplish this in all the journeys which they made to this river, from which I shall continue my march forward in the morning.

May our Lord spare the life of your Excellency many years. San Dionisio, February 9, 1774. The hand of your Excellency is kissed by your humble servant.

JUAN BAUTISTA DE ANZA.

To the Most Excellent Señor Lieutenant-general  
Don Antonio María Bucareli y Ursua.

## XXVII

### ANZA TO BUCARELI

SANTA OLAYA, FEBRUARY 28, 1774<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

No. 2

On the 9th of the month just ending I informed your Excellency of my arrival at and the crossing of the Gila and Colorado rivers, and of the friendly reception which I had there from the Yuma tribe and their captain;<sup>2</sup> and I am now reporting again, because I have found it necessary to come to an agreement with this captain, who has come at my call to the place where I am writing this letter and offers to send it for me to the nearest pueblos of the Pápagos or Pimas.

From the 9th until the following 12th I made three marches down the river, which I found well populated with people who allowed me a most friendly passage, although they are of a tribe distinct from the Yumas.<sup>3</sup> With a view to leaving on the right a stretch of some leagues of impassable sand dunes, among which the native of California, whom I have already told your Excellency I was taking with me, was lost, I am endeavoring to take another direction, in order not to expose ourselves to any such mishap as he had in the dunes, and although for this pur-

<sup>1</sup> A. G. P. M., Cor. Vir., II Sér., Bucareli, 1774. Tomo 38/55. Documentos del numo. 1421. Original. Copies are in A. G. I., 104-3-4 and 104-6-15.

<sup>2</sup> Olleyquotequiebe, or Salvador Palma.

<sup>3</sup> At the end of the second day below Yuma he reached the borders of the Cojat or Cajuenche tribe.

pose I am making something of a detour, I hope by means of it to avoid passing through them.

While seeking for such a route on the 15th, having made a longer day's march than usual, we finally discovered that because of the weak and wretched state in which the horses and mules left my presidio, through occurrences that happened there just before my departure, and which has been greatly aggravated on the march, nearly all of them falling sick and many dying as a result of having eaten an herb which abounds in these fields, through lack of their usual and native pastures, especially the pack mules, it is not possible to continue with all of them on the expedition, for to attempt it would be to frustrate it entirely.

To avoid this mischance, which would be a great sorrow to us, and with the approval and satisfaction of all the other members of the expedition, I arranged to return to the place where we had finished the last day's march along the Colorado River,<sup>1</sup> to recuperate our animals on its good pastures for some days, and as there was no other choice, to entrust most of the cargo, the cattle, and other animals that were absolutely worn-out and unable to continue on the road, to the care and custody of the captain of the Yumas. We have no reason to distrust him or his tribe, but instead have had many proofs of his honesty and affection. For this purpose there will remain with him, besides what has been mentioned, three soldiers of good character, and four muleteers.

<sup>1</sup> Anza's diaries tell this story in detail.



The captain promises to give a good account of everything, and the soldiers remain with all the instructions necessary for any event.

Because of this confidence that I feel in the captain and his tribe, I do not think it necessary to leave any more soldiers, for, by reason of the communication and good relations which they have with us, they are among the heathen most strongly attached to us. Another reason is my confidence in our converted Pápagos and Pimas. Since the latter often come to visit and live among the Yumas, it is not to be presumed that this tribe will attempt any evil, for besides the fact that the Pápagos and Pimas would not consent to it, it would not be easy to hide it from them. These things are not true of the tribes that follow,<sup>1</sup> nor am I free to pass through them, being compelled, because of the bad condition of our mounts already spoken of, to go in another direction, so that, even though it may be at the cost of the greatest efforts, my arrival in some part of Northern California may be accomplished.

On the second day of next month I shall leave this place with eleven light loads on the strongest mules, which will carry provisions for one month, when, at the latest, the native of California estimates, we should come out at one of the establishments, at the mission of San Gabriel or above; indeed, he says that if the animals were not so prostrated it would be a march of only fifteen days or less. He adds that

<sup>1</sup> He means the tribes farther up the Colorado River, the route which he had hoped to follow.

beyond a place which he calls The Pass,<sup>1</sup> which we can reach in eight days' travel, there is water at convenient distances, and that from here to this pass it ought not to be lacking nor should there be any difficulty whatever. So we are going in good spirits, and determined, moreover, to go on foot if necessary to reach that place, as well as the afore-said San Gabriel, at least.

Assuming that your Excellency will approve, it has seemed to me desirable to send you this information, because my return from this expedition, which they set for me at two or three months, may be delayed, and those who are ignorant of the occurrences herein related might spread alarming rumors, especially if it is known, as it will be commonly known among the Pápagos and Pimas, that there are some of our men on the Colorado River,<sup>2</sup> for according to what I have seen beyond that river and of the tribes that remain for me to pass through, I find no indication that they will impede my way by force of arms, for they are all, so I am informed, as harmless and poor spirited as the Yumas and Cogats, with whom I am now.

May the Lord spare the important life of your Excellency for many years. Laguna de Santa Olaya, on the road to Northern California. February 28, 1774. Most Excellent Sir,

JUAN BAP.<sup>TA</sup> DE ANZA (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Lieutenant-general Don Ant.º María Bucareli y Ursua.

<sup>1</sup> The Pass of San Carlos, opening into Cahuilla Valley.

<sup>2</sup> Those left behind by Anza.

XXVIII

SERRA TO THE GUARDIAN

SAN DIEGO, MARCH 31, 1774<sup>1</sup>

HAIL JESUS, MARY, AND JOSEPH

VERY REVEREND FATHER GUARDIAN AND DEAR SIR. MY  
VENERATED FATHER:

Now with the favor of God, and the prosperous and not very long voyage, we two subjects of your Reverence, Father Fray Pablo<sup>2</sup> and I, arrived at this port and mission of San Diego. We set sail on the 25th of January, and cast anchor at the mouth of this port on the 13th of March, and on the following day we came inside of it. The father companion, before we counted fifteen days of sailing, was taken with tertian ague, and without missing a single day he still has the chills and fever, although with the joy of being on land he is getting stronger, and I hope that he will soon be well. But, considering how weak he has remained, and the horror which he has acquired for the bark, he cannot be induced to continue his expedition, and he begs me to designate someone else, a request which I of necessity shall have to grant at least from here to Monte Rey. As for the rest we shall see later.

<sup>1</sup> Transcript from the original in a private collection.

<sup>2</sup> Fray Pablo Mugártegui, who was chaplain on the vessel.

Here I have found only two friars, who are Father Fray Luís and Father Fuster. The rest have gone to the missions farther up, with the exception of three, who still remain in [Old] California, namely Fathers Campa, Cambón, and Sánchez, the first awaiting the cattle of the concordat<sup>1</sup> and the other two the packs which remain in Vellicatá, concerning which I petitioned your Excellency. When the one or the other may come I cannot say. Neither has Captain Rivera arrived, and when he comes, if he does not bring with him these packs and cattle, there is nothing to do but leave it all, and that the friars shall come and we leave [Old] California completely. Orders of his Excellency have already been given for both one and the other. If they are not fulfilled, what are we to do?

. . .

When I had brought this letter to this point, deferring its conclusion until I should have from San Gabriel a reply to the one I wrote them on the very day of my arrival, in order that they might come here to relieve their necessities, messengers came from there on Palm Sunday with the news of the arrival on the 22d of this month at that mission of the expedition of the captain of Tubac, Don Juan Bautista de Anza, with two fathers of the Holy Cross of Querétaro, namely Father Fray Francisco Garzés and Father Fray Juan Díaz. Both write me, and likewise the captain. I was greatly delighted with

<sup>1</sup> An agreement between Dominicans and Fernandinos, made at the time when the latter withdrew from Lower California.

the report, given in outline, because I felt sure of some alleviation, but as soon as I was informed of the details my sorrow was greater than formerly had been my joy. According to what I am informed by Father Garzés, who now is here with me, as well as by some soldiers belonging to the expedition, the case indeed has been thus:

Just when Captain Ansa was ready to set out from his presidio with his people and horse herd, the Apaches fell upon the cavallada and ran it off and the operation was suspended. He equipped himself a second time, and two days before the one which he had set anew for his departure, the Apaches fell upon him a second time and once more ran off the horse herd, killing the sergeant and some arrieros.

In the interim it happened that one of those two families of California Indians who, as I informed your Excellency in my communication of the 13th of March of the present year, No.<sup>1</sup>——, had been brought to this mission of San Diego and afterward were moved to San Gabriel, fled from that mission, together with another California Indian, a bachelor. Of the three deserters, then, two Indians and one Indian woman, the bachelor and the married woman died of thirst on the way, and the one remaining, called Sebastián Taraval, of the mission of Santa Gertrudis, arrived at the presidio of El Altar. This news was reported to the captain of Tubac, who, seeing himself with an Indian who had just come from the place to which he was planning to go, and being

<sup>1</sup> Blank in the original.

crippled with all those difficulties, arranged his march without waiting to inform or consult with Father Garzés, but deciding to follow wherever the Indian Sebastián might wish to lead them.

On the 9th of January they started from the presidio of Tubac. On the 22d of the same month they set out from the mission of Caborca, which is the last one. They traveled toward the Colorado River, and having arrived there they found themselves with the animals tired out. Although a better site could not be desired in which to restore them with a few days of rest, the captain, in view of what the Indian said to the effect that within a few days they would be able to reach the mission from which he had fled, decided to leave saddle animals, cattle, and packs, even wishing to leave one of the fathers and travel light for that mission with one mount for each man and the necessary provisions.

Well, they set out thus, and on the 22d of the present month they reached that mission in such bad shape that many of the men arrived on foot, leading their tired animals. On the last day they had eaten absolutely nothing and in the preceding days very little, the captain and the fathers asserting that they did not have even a little cake of chocolate. And so they came to a mission which was unable to give them any more consolation than the news which had reached there two days previously, of the arrival of the bark at this port. There they remained and there they are still remaining as best they can.

The captain obtained the mules of the mission, loaned him by the fathers, to come here for supplies. To Captain Don Juan Pérez he writes asking him to send a pilot with an instrument for observing, to go with him to take the latitudes, and he tells him that if the sergeant of this place does not provide him with supplies Don Juan must do so. Don Juan is replying that he needs the pilot for his own expedition by sea, and that the sergeant will supply him with provisions. To the latter Captain Ansa writes that of the mules of the king and of the soldiers he must send him as many as he can, if he does not wish to be responsible for delaying the service of both majesties. And of me he begs that I shall procure the supplies, chocolate, and as many of the mounts of the missions as I can.

. . .

In view then of all the circumstances, it is easy to see how we are situated for providing Señor Anza with saddle and pack animals for his Grace and his men, not only to go to Monte Rey, but also from here to the Rio Colorado until he meets his men, and that from Monte Rey Father Crespi shall go, as he requests me, to take the latitudes in the intervening spaces, and that the soldiers from Monte Rey shall go to accompany him on his return, which must be over roads entirely new, for they are not to go, nor can they go, by the route by which they have come. This is the same as to wish that at the expense of what supplies we have, we should make an expedi-

tion, more difficult, more doubtful, and more costly than his.

Finally, I am going to start on the 3d day of Easter for San Gabriel, to talk with this gentleman, and we shall see how we can arrange so that he can send to the Colorado for his animals, provisions, and men, in order that they may not have to arrive at missions like those which follow, having no notice of the bark, without a cake of chocolate, and perhaps without a tortilla to give to the fathers of Santa Cruz and to the captain. The former, yes, for the cows, which up to now we have guarded like the apples of our eyes, contenting ourselves with the milk in order that they may multiply, will bear the burden, so that our brothers of Santa Cruz may not suffer hunger at the same time that they suffer inconveniences while they are with us.

In other respects the expedition is very welcome, because the soldiers say that the road from San Gabriel to Caborca being known, it is found to be a distance of only about twenty days, although the expedition has spent on it two entire months. The road which they have seen, they say, is such that they have passed more mountains between San Gabriel and here than in all their journey. They say also that it would have been nearer to come to San Diego than to go to San Gabriel, from which it is inferred that the latitude shown by the observations of the Jesuit fathers at the mouth of the Rio Colorado and its junction with the Gila is wrong and



excessive, for if it were not thus San Diego would have been much farther for them.

Finally, if your Excellency should wish to give to these new establishments all kinds of stock, now that it is known that it is not necessary that they should come from California, as soon as this is put on a good footing we shall not have to ask for more stock, and our conquests shall be extended in these directions to the ends of the earth.

. . .

May God our Lord spare your Reverence many years in His holy grace. From this your Reverence's mission of San Diego, March 31, 1774. The hand of your Reverence is kissed by your most affectionate servant and subject.<sup>1</sup>

FRAY JUNIPERO SERRA (Rubric).

<sup>1</sup> On April 2 Father Garcés wrote from San Diego a long account of the first Anza expedition to San Gabriel. It is printed in Vol. II of this work.

## XXIX

### DIAZ TO BUCARELI

SAN GABRIEL, APRIL 8, 1774<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

Pursuant to your Excellency's order to the effect that another friar should be associated with the Reverend Father Fray Francisco Garcés for the enterprise which happily has just been accomplished, my superior was pleased to employ my humble talents for this purpose. And having fulfilled, according to my poor ability, the charge which was given to the reverend father that of everything which happened an exact diary should be kept, I am sending to your Excellency the one which for my part I have written. Its errors and defects I humbly beg you to overlook in your great wisdom, for I have no doubt I have made many because of my lack of instruction and experience in such matters.<sup>2</sup>

I take advantage of this occasion, likewise, to offer to your Excellency most hearty congratulations for having achieved in your happy administration an enterprise of such moment that, I am sure, it was granted to you by the Infinite Majesty in return for your great piety, and the zealous effort with which each day you seek more and more the exalta-

<sup>1</sup> Carta y Diario a S.<sup>a</sup> Diego del P. Diaz escrita desde la Mision de S.<sup>a</sup> Gabriel. A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo 396.

<sup>2</sup> The diary is printed in Vol. II of this work.

tion of His divine name, the honor and glory of our Catholic sovereign, and the luster of our nation and of the Spanish monarchy.

May God grant that your Excellency may continue in greater enterprises with all honor, success, and happiness, and may He preserve your most important life for me many years in His divine love. Mission San Gavriel, April 8, 1774. Most Excellent Sir, your Excellency's hand is kissed by your humblest servant and chaplain,

FRAY JUAN DÍAZ (Rubric).

To the Señor Lieutenant-general, Don Antonio María Bucareli y Ursua.

XXX

ANZA TO BUCARELI

SAN GABRIEL, APRIL 10, 1774<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

No. 3

On the 28th of last February I informed your Excellency of the decision that I had made to try to reach Northern California. This I have now accomplished, arriving on the 22d of last month at this mission of San Gabriel, without having had any other misfortune than that our mounts lacked strength to enable us to make the journey on their backs. But this difficulty was overcome by the good spirits of our soldiers, most of whom marched to this place on foot.

By the road which I have followed since I left my presidio, counting inevitable detours in an unknown land, I have traveled up to this place two hundred and seventy-nine leagues, according to my calculations. But on my return these may be brought down to only two hundred, making the presidio of Monte Rey three hundred leagues distant from the one in my charge or from that of El Altar, by roads passable even for wheeled vehicles.

In the diverse tribes which I have left behind, and they make up a considerable number, there has not been the least indication of a desire to oppose

<sup>1</sup> A. G. P. M., Cor. Vir., II Sér., Bucareli, 1774. Tomo 38/55. Documentos del numo. 1421. Original. Copies are in A. G. I., 104-3-4 and 104-6-15.

Cmo. Sr.

En atencion al orden de V.E. para que al R.P.F.  
 Franco sacos asociar dos Religiosos en la Empresa, que  
 felizmente se acaba de conseguir; tuvo á bien mi Pre-  
 lado servir de mi inutilidad para este fin. Y habiendo  
 practicado, segun mi insuficiencia, el encargo, que se ha-  
 co á dho. R. Padre, para que de todo lo acaído se for-  
 me exacto diario, remito á V.E. el que he formado por  
 mi parte, cuyos errores, y defectos, Suplico Vendidamente  
 disimule su gran prudencia; que no dudo aya producido  
 muchos mi ninguna inteligencia, y practica en tales asun-  
 tos. Con esta deavision se me proporciona tambien dar  
 á V.E. mil enhorabuena, por haver conseguido en su  
 feliz Joviano empresa de tanta monta, que tengo por ci-  
 ento le ha concedido la infinita Mage. en Votorno desuma-  
 cha piedad, y generoso empeño, con que cada dia solici-  
 ta mas, y mas la Exaltacion de su Dño hombre, la hon-  
 rra, y gloria de Nro Catholico Monarca, y lustre de Nra  
 nacion; y Monarquia Española. Dios Nro Sr. conceda  
 á V.E. la consecucion de mayores empresas, toda exal-  
 tacion, felicidad, y dicha, y mejor su importantissima vida  
 m. a. en su Dño Amén.

Univ. de San Gabriel y Abril 8. de 1774.

2.

Cmo. Sr.

B.M. de V.E. su masal serv. y Expella

En the. D. N. Sr. Juan Diaz  
 Sr. the. D. N. Sr. Maria Bucareli, y Vnca

FATHER DIAZ'S LETTER TO BUCARELI FROM SAN GABRIEL,  
 APRIL 8, 1774



our passage. On the contrary, through the good treatment which they experienced they have become attached to us. Those which I have seen are very harmless, poor, and miserable in a higher degree than those who live on the Colorado River.

Five days' march from that stream I entered a fertile land, abounding in water and pasturage, and at seven days' travel I came to silver-bearing country, all of which may be settled with good haciendas for farming and planting.<sup>1</sup> Thus, no doubt remains that the passage from Sonora to this mission is very easy. And from what I have observed I assume that the same will be true by coming out at a higher latitude,<sup>2</sup> for example at the mission of San Luís, which they tell me is seventy leagues from this one. That route I think would be the best one by which to come from Sonora to the presidio of Monte Rey, especially if this Peninsula must be provided with supplies from the produce of the lower part of the province mentioned, and that is the only part of the province that can provide them, since it does not suffer from such calamities as the upper part experiences through inroads of the Apaches. I did not attempt to take that route because the provisions that I was able to bring from the Colorado River and the poor mounts would not last any longer than the time necessary to reach this mission of San Gabriel.

<sup>1</sup> He reached the well watered country at the Cahuilla Valley.

<sup>2</sup> Anza holds tenaciously to this idea of a route by a higher latitude. He probably had heard while at San Gabriel of Fages's journey to San Luís Obispo by way of Cajón Pass.

Notwithstanding that this mission is the best supplied of all the new establishments from San Diego to Monte Rey, I found its missionaries and soldier guard in such straits for provisions that the daily ration is reduced to three tortillas<sup>1</sup> and some wild herbs, and the father missionaries assure me that from here to Monte Rey conditions are even worse.

Having arrived here on the date mentioned, and learned that a few days previously his Majesty's frigate *Nueva Galicia* had dropped anchor in the port of San Diego, in consequence of not having been able to reach the port of Monte Rey, where she is bound with provisions, I sent to ask her commander and the commander of the port for some assistance from their supplies to enable me to continue my journey. And from the latter I requested some mounts, so that if both requests were granted I could go on to Monte Rey and from there set out to return directly to one of the places through which I have come.

On the 5th of the present month I received, with replies from both commanders, all the supplies that they could possibly send me, but since, because of their paucity and their bad condition, there are not enough to support all my expedition for more than sixteen days, or until my arrival at Monte Rey, I have resolved in conference with one of the fathers who came with me (for one went to San Diego and has not returned),<sup>2</sup> to send back most of the members

<sup>1</sup> Griddle cakes made of corn meal.

<sup>2</sup> Father Garcés went to San Diego. Anza conferred with Father Diaz.



of the expedition to the Colorado River, where alone they can obtain provisions, while I go on to Monte Rey for the purposes which I state in my diary.

Because of this necessary return, which includes both fathers,<sup>1</sup> who are to await me at the Colorado River, and because there has been no news of the new commander of Monte Rey, Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada; and since the father missionaries inform me of the great delay suffered by letters in going out from this Peninsula to any of the ports in the other part of it,<sup>2</sup> I have thought it best to send to your Excellency from this post, by the courier who brought me your Excellency's order to undertake this expedition, the report which you commanded me to send from the port of Monte Rey. For by this method I think that you will receive it more promptly for any purpose that may arise and that it will be agreeable to your Excellency.

With this understanding I enclose to your Excellency the diaries that have been prepared along the way.<sup>3</sup> In mine especially your Excellency will find much to criticise, because of my small experience in keeping them, my bad handwriting, and worse incompetence, all of which I hope the great charity of your Excellency will pardon.

I have been prevented from going on to Monte Rey until now by the continuous rains, and because I

<sup>1</sup> Father Díaz did not go with the return party.

<sup>2</sup> He means by way of Lower California.

<sup>3</sup> These included his own diary (B) and that of Father Díaz (D). Father Garcés led the return party and sent his diary from the Yuma junction.

have been waiting for the father who went to San Diego. I estimate that I shall return from there to the Colorado River next month, and at the end of the month to my presidio, whence I shall set out some time in June for that city, in order to give your Excellency a complete account of my expedition.

Meanwhile, I congratulate your Excellency that it is during your fortunate government that this undertaking has been accomplished, for only through your attention has it merited approval. From it I expect great advantages to the service of both Majesties and the glory of your Excellency, and this is my desire as the faithful servant of his Majesty and the humble subordinate of your Excellency, joined to my hope that the small merit and slender talent that I have employed in it may meet with your approval, so that through it I may secure that of the royal piety of his Majesty, as I confide in the natural kindness of your Excellency.

May our Lord spare the important life of your Excellency for many years. Mission of San Gabriel, in Northern California, April 10, 1774. Most Excellent Sir,

JUAN BAP.<sup>TA</sup> DE ANZA (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Lieutenant-general Don  
Ant.º María Bucareli y Urzua.

XXXI

PALOU TO THE GUARDIAN

MISSION OF SAN CARLOS, APRIL 22, 1774<sup>1</sup>

VERY REVEREND FATHER GUARDIAN OF THE APOSTOLIC  
COLLEGE OF SAN FERNANDO.

My Venerable Father Guardian: Since we have not yet learned who our prelate is I can not give his name in this letter, but as a subordinate I can do no less than promise my obedience to whomsoever may have been chosen by that apostolic College, and I hereby do so, seizing the opportunity offered by the Señor Captain Don Juan Bautista de Anza, who, accompanied by two reverend missionaries from the apostolic College of Santa Cruz de Querétaro, opened the road for communication between these new missions and the province of Sonora, without having to come by sea, which is a great service to God and the king, and a universal benefit for these missions, as I expect that time will show.<sup>2</sup>

The Captain arrived at the mission of San Gabriel on the 22d of March just past, having traveled from his presidio on the frontier of Sonora, named Tubac, eighty leagues to the Colorado River, and from there ninety leagues to the mission of San Gabriel, through villages of heathen, all mild and tractable, and well

<sup>1</sup> Documentos Relativos á las Misiones de Californias, Quarto Sér., Tomo II. Museo Nacional, Mexico. Copy.

<sup>2</sup> The missionaries in remote California were overjoyed at Anza's achievement, from which they expected much.

supplied with wheat and maize, and he says that he was well received by the heathen in all those villages. Thanks to God the road has now been opened, so that in time of need we may be succored, since in so short a distance as a hundred and seventy leagues of travel we may be in lands inhabited by Spaniards.<sup>1</sup>

The Señor Captain, who was pleased to come from the mission of San Gabriel as far as this last mission, where he arrived in the 18th day of the current April, tells me that he has decided to return by the mission of San Luís and cut across until he reaches the Colorado River,<sup>2</sup> where he left saddle animals and cattle in the care of the heathen, who were so mild that he judged them to be worthy of confidence, and that as soon as he reaches his presidio he will go to give an account of his expedition to his Excellency. He has promised me that he will go to see your Reverence<sup>3</sup> and give you a report of these missions and of the projects that he is taking to propose to his Excellency for the good of these new conquests, in which I hope that your Reverence will coöperate as far as you can.

The principal project is that missions shall be established all the way from these as far as the last one<sup>4</sup> of the fathers of Querétaro in Sonora, which is a hundred and seventy leagues distant by the road

<sup>1</sup> This was truly a frontiersman's idea of distance.

<sup>2</sup> Anza soon changed his plans.

<sup>3</sup> At the College of San Fernando in Mexico City, where Anza hoped soon to be.

<sup>4</sup> This was Caborca.

that has been opened by the Captain. Two good ones can be founded by your college, one on the river called Santa Ana and the other in a valley named San Joseph,<sup>1</sup> and afterwards those of the fathers of Querétaro can follow, making a chain from these missions to those of the Pimería.

One pressing thing that he has in charge is to propose to his Excellency that, taking it for granted that the road is now open to communicate by land from Monterrey to Mexico, mail shall be sent every two months. The soldier couriers going from these missions as far as the Colorado River, there the letters can be received and taken on by the soldiers of the last presidio of Sonora, nearest to the Colorado River, which is the one called Altar, by which means his Excellency will very quickly get news of these conquests. Thinking that this idea may be carried out, it has been arranged that six soldiers shall go with the Captain to the Colorado River,<sup>2</sup> so that they may become acquainted with the road which is now open as far as the mission of San Gabriel. For this reason it has been decided that he shall go by way of that mission and not by way of San Luís, as I said above. If this mail service is established, your Reverence will have news frequently from your subordinates exiled in this corner of the world.

Another project is that his Excellency shall order that the eight droves of mules which the king has idle in Sonora, having remained from the expedition

<sup>1</sup> Near Riverside and San Jacinto, respectively.

<sup>2</sup> This plan was carried out, and the soldiers went from Monterrey.

to the Cerro Prieto,<sup>1</sup> shall be assigned for the succor of these new conquests, four to be employed in carrying grain and supplies as far as the Colorado River, and the other four from that river to San Gabriel. By this means these missions will be easily supplied until they are in running order so that they can support themselves, which may be in a few years if they have aid and succor now.

He also carries the plan that settlers may come from Sonora by the new road, and he assures me that there will be many who will desire to come. Also that the China ship shall stop at Monterey, or at the port of our holy father San Francisco, where it can take on refreshments, leaving something for the benefit of these Indians. And, if permission can be obtained from his Majesty to unload some goods from China, in order to supply the interior provinces of Sonora, New Mexico, etc., this very fertile land will be as good as settled, and the immense number of heathen converted. I hope that your Reverence will coöperate in every way that you can for the accomplishment of these projects, which are so greatly for the service of God and the King and the honor of that apostolic College.

Now is a good time to ask his Excellency to order that the horses and mules which he has entrusted to Don Pedro Corbalán,<sup>2</sup> intendant of the real hacienda of the province of Sonora, shall come from Sonora by land. And you might ask him to see that

<sup>1</sup> The Elizondo campaign.

<sup>2</sup> "Colobaran" in the text.

all kinds of stock shall be brought for breeding, in order to give these missions a start, for, with the good pastures, abundance of land and water, and the good climate, they will multiply rapidly and will be of great utility to the new conquests.

In view of the fact that with this new road that has been opened communication with Sonora will be very frequent, it would be an advantage if we had in the settlements next to these missions a brother syndic to whom we might have recourse for any assistance that we might require. I have spoken to the Captain in regard to what persons could and would serve kindly and honestly, and he has told me that Don Manuel de Monteagudo, resident of the town of San Miguel de Horcasitas,<sup>1</sup> would accept this charge with much pleasure, and that he is a man endowed with all the qualities required. Your Reverence will see whether the commission can be sent him by the hand of the Captain, for by this means we shall have some one to whom we can turn in all security and confidence. I hope that your Reverence will attend to the alleviation of these subordinates of yours, which we would enjoy with the appointment of a good brother who would relieve the needs from which we are suffering here.

I have no doubt that my Reverend Father Lector and President, Fray Junípero Serra, will write of all these points, but as I do not know whether he will be able to see the Captain, I do not omit to write

<sup>1</sup> The capital of Sonora.

them to your Reverence in his name. The Reverend Father President, according to what the Captain tells me, arrived safely at San Diego on the 13th of March.<sup>1</sup> I have not yet received a letter from him, from which I judge that he is traveling by land to this mission. I do not doubt that he will have written to your Reverence from that mission telling of his arrival, for I have heard that mail was dispatched to California.<sup>2</sup> The urgency of the departure of the Captain does not give me time to inform you of the progress of these missions, but, having seen nearly all of them, he will give a detailed report of everything. I hope that your Reverence will listen to him as he deserves, not only for the great affection that he has for us, but also for the very great good that will follow to these missions from the expedition which he has just made.

All the reverend fathers of these missions are in good health, and are working in this vineyard of the Lord, and I remain humbly yielding my obedience to your Reverence, praying God to spare your life for many years. From your mission of San Carlos de Monterey, April 22, 1774.

Your humble subordinate kisses your Reverence's hand.

FR. FRAN.<sup>CO</sup> PALOU (Rubric).

<sup>1</sup> Serra was on his way back from Mexico.

<sup>2</sup> He means Lower California.



XXXII

LASUEN TO PANGUA

MISSION SAN GABRIEL, APRIL 23, 1774<sup>1</sup>

HAIL JESUS!

REVEREND FATHER LECTOR, FRAY FRANCISCO PANGUA:

My Much Venerated Father: Having been relieved from the labors, cares, and anxieties of the Californias,<sup>2</sup> and enjoying now the place of supernumerary in this new department, I proceed to make known to your Reverence my continued affection and love.

. . .

Of the expedition by land by way of the Colorado River, under the command of Captain Don Juan Bauta. de Ansa, your Reverence will know whatever you may wish. I hear said of it by some persons of judgment that it will not produce any advancement of these new establishments for a long time, nor save them from their much-feared extinction. But I have very great hopes to the contrary. The country is most beautiful, the heathen numerous and very docile, and by planting crops we may be able to replant our voices, with all assurance that with the favor of God the most abundant harvests for things both eternal and temporal may be reaped.

<sup>1</sup> Documentos Relativos á las Misiones de Californias. Quarto Sér., Tomo II. Museo Nacional, Mexico.

<sup>2</sup> Lower California.

More than a year ago I wrote to the reverend father lector and ex-guardian, Verger, inclosing two letters asking for certain very necessary proceedings, of which perhaps your Reverence may have heard, but since I have had no reply I am in continuous and very grave anxiety. Therefore I beg your Reverence, for the love of God, to find out and tell me of their receipt and approval, or the contrary, for in this case my reverend father president makes possible to me the fulfillment of my important and very necessary request.

I am also asking of my reverend father guardian, in a letter of this date, that he do me the favor of sending me a complete outfit of clothing, for, since in five full years of administering my mission of San Borja I did not succeed in getting the value of a single year's salary, I left that unfortunate Peninsula entirely destitute, even of small clothes and sandals, although I know that it was due to the impossibility of sending them from that College. Perhaps from this necessity it has resulted that the Indians like me so well, for *similitudo est causa de amore*,<sup>1</sup> and with so little clothing I am indeed very similar to them.

May God our Lord spare your Reverence in His holy grace many years. Mission of San Gabriel, April 23, 1774. The hand of your Reverence is kissed by your firmest friend and servant, and perhaps your subordinate.

FRAY FERMÍN FRAN.<sup>co</sup> DE LASUÉN.

<sup>1</sup> "Similarity causes love."

### XXXIII

## GARCÉS TO BUCARELI

LA JUNTA, APRIL 27, 1774<sup>1</sup>

HAIL JESUS AND MOST HOLY MARY!

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

Today, the 26th of April, I arrived safely, thanks to God, at a place near the junction of the Gila and Colorado rivers. My letter written to your Excellency at San Diego, on the second of April if I am not mistaken, did not anticipate the events that happened afterwards. On the 11th of April I reached San Gabriel in company with the reverend father president, Fray Junípero Serra, where we heard of the departure of the commander, traveling light to Monte Rey, for which place he had left on the preceding day. I learned also of the order for the troops to return with us immediately, and of the special courier<sup>2</sup> whom the commander was sending to your Excellency, and that in consequence the return and observations by another road, which I have so greatly desired, would not take place.<sup>3</sup> Father Juan and I thought of returning to San Diego to get the instrument from the father chaplain, who was ill, but who might perhaps instruct Father Juan in its use, as he has a good understanding and knows its principles.

<sup>1</sup> 13 documentos que comprehénden 2 Diarios. A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo 52, No. 21.

<sup>2</sup> Valdés.

<sup>3</sup> Father Garcés was greatly disappointed at this.

But the soldiers and the courier in their haste raised insuperable difficulties, and we therefore decided that Father Juan should remain for the purpose stated and accompany the commander on his return,<sup>1</sup> while I should come back with the troops, as I did, beginning my return with sixteen individuals of the expedition and the mules, the rest remaining with the commander, who, it is clear, must have been hard put to it to decide on this mode of procedure.

On my return I continued the diary, which I am sending to your Excellency finished, but in bad writing and worse spelling. If it had all been written by my own hand, however slowly I might write, what would it be if I had written the whole diary on the return from San Gabriel to this junction of the rivers? But fortunately, on the third day after leaving San Gabriel the corporal of the mission came to look for an Indian boy, and he wrote about four sheets in good handwriting.<sup>2</sup> This being so, I am sending the diary apart from this letter, and asking that it be copied in the province<sup>3</sup> so that it may reach your Excellency in good handwriting. I depended upon finding an amanuensis at Monte Rey and writing from there, but I believe that Father Juan and the commander have put so much care on their diaries that there will be no need for mine, though it does have the special merit of recording the return and

<sup>1</sup> Father Díaz went to San Diego, according to this plan.

<sup>2</sup> He overtook Garcés in the San Jacinto Valley.

<sup>3</sup> He means at one of the missions of Sonora. It was sent just as he wrote it.

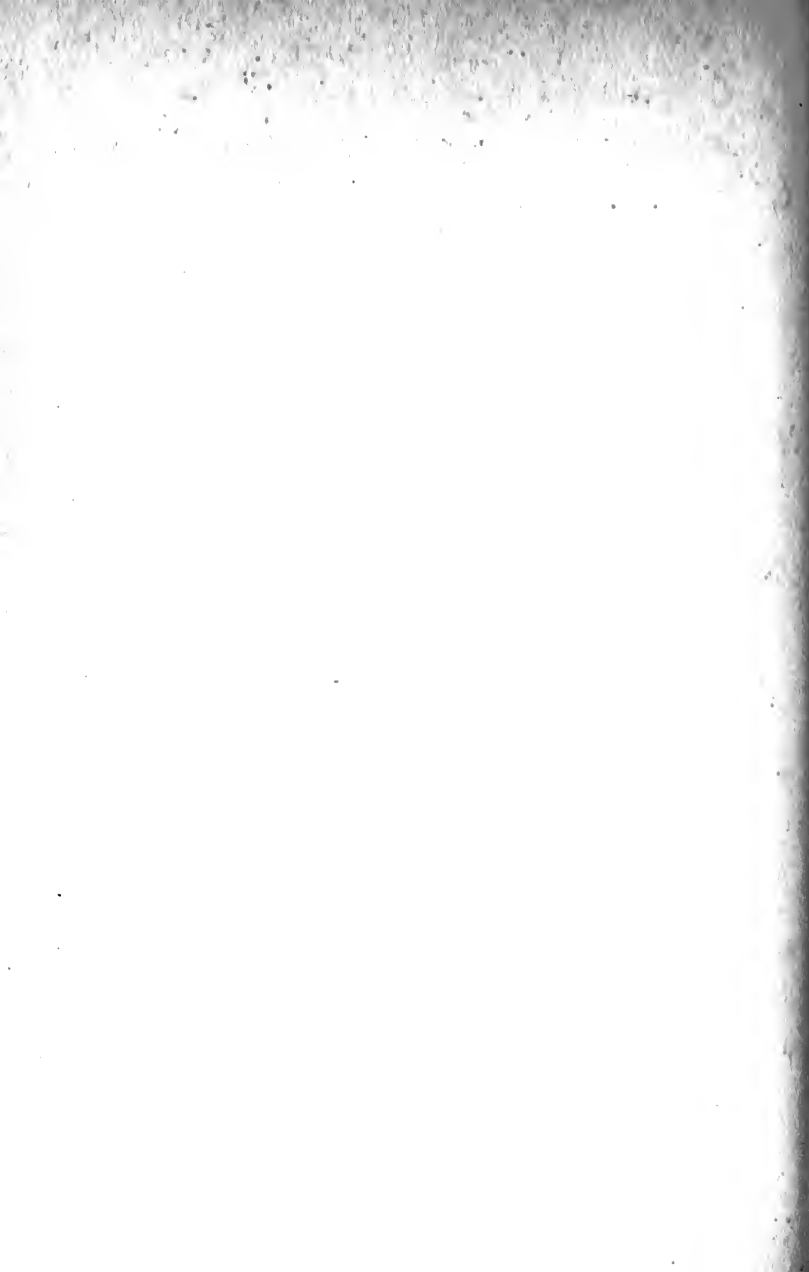
+

Viva Rey y Ma. Sa.

Ex mo Sr

Oy 26 de Abril. Llegado con felicidad a' dios gracias en  
ca de la <sup>unión</sup> de los Rios. Gila y Colorado. mi carta escrita a V.  
en indio sino me engaño endon de Abril no suponía lo que me  
que del puey an sucedido. el dia 11 de Abril llegue a un  
buel en la <sup>unión</sup> de los Rios. Gila y Colorado. mi carta escrita a V.  
novedad de la ida del Sr. Comandante a la Sigena. y te Mon.  
Rey para don de avia salido el dia ante cedente: supe lo vi  
den de vuelta la hora con nosotros in mediata mente, i el co  
reco extra ordinario que despachaba a V. y con esto que ya  
no se enfiama la observacion i buelta por este camino que  
yo tanto deseado. Sentamos el P. Juan y el volaron por el dios  
para tomar el inhunento del Plapella quedo en feno que en  
tal vez podra inhuir al Juan que tiene y puripios y buen  
en tendimiento p'ro la buelta i el conu con la p'ro inhuen  
v'ly difusidad y allí i el ob'vio que quedare el P. Juan para dios  
efecto y a componer alie Comandante a la buelta y yo volver carta  
tropa como lo expente impetando mi buelta con dios i ser  
inhuir buen de la expedicion, muy de quedando los x'tantes con el  
en Comandante que en este repuey seaya visto bien apartado pa  
ra de la misma buelta i en la ma ex presada.

En mi repuey pro  
sequi al dios que remito a V. o cobado pero con mucha leha  
ninguna orkeña fia ipen dig'tado todo en mi p'ro p'ro p'ro  
de espacio que escriba p'ro que era aver el tanto el dios  
en la buelta de la Inhuir a la p'ro de los Rios?  
y aun tubo la fortuna que al 3 dia que avia salido de  
Gabriel Negro. el iabo de la Inhuir en busca de un indio y  
el iabo como 4 g'as de buena letra por ser esto  
así embio el dios fuera de esta carta y pido que lo tray'aden  
en la p'ro p'ro p'ro Negro. Negro con buena letra.  
yo fiaba que se eciencia de la Monte Rey y a la ma anam  
ense impetando que an p'ro mucho cuidado el P. Juan P'ro  
lo comodante en los p'ro con que no ara folia el mo. Este te  
ne lo p'ro p'ro de tener la buelta de x'tantes al dios que e  
ne lo p'ro p'ro de tener la buelta de x'tantes al dios que e  
emhiado a V. lo que se eciencia de la Monte Rey y a la ma anam



of referring to the diaries which I have already sent to your Excellency, and which will be better understood by reading this.

I hope that the observations<sup>1</sup> will be made and added to the diaries, but if this is not done now it is said that the College is sending a friar who understands this work. In that case the observation at the rivers will be made, for no doubt everybody will work willingly. I should hope so. I fully understood that the order for a person of good character and conduct to accompany me was not given for my consolation, but that he might make the observations, but there was no instrument or skilled person in the province. However, I am glad that some information has been acquired without an astrolabe. The worst thing is that some small attempt at it could not be made now, but I have not even a compass for the purpose.

I am so far from being satisfied with the expedition that, on the contrary, I admit that my best hopes are disappointed,<sup>2</sup> my curiosity displeased, and my spirit humbled with the serious and certain knowledge that we have not done more because I have been wanting. Nevertheless, the efforts, expenditures, and good management of the commander are extremely creditable, and I hope that he will be rewarded in every possible way in order to stimulate others to propose similar enterprises. This grace the new

<sup>1</sup> He means the astronomical observations.

<sup>2</sup> He was particularly disappointed at not finding a way directly from Yuma to Monterey by a higher latitude.

government of the presidios possesses, for whereas formerly purses were looked for in them, now they look for men.

I have been vainglorious in desiring so greatly to serve God, the King, and your Excellency, but I know with certainty that God has often looked with charity on good intentions, and hence your Excellency should do the same in this matter with me, forgetting my ignorance and my shortcomings. I would like to write more but I refrain because I do not know how to write well and am worried by the early departure of the courier.<sup>1</sup>

I am asking for some saddle animals and some provisions, in order to wait for the commander, and for his use when he returns.<sup>2</sup> I do not know what he will decide nor by what direction he will return, but if I had gone to Monte Rey I would have urged the two commanders<sup>3</sup> to return by a route higher up.

Father Juan excused himself from going on the hasty trip to Monte Rey because the captain travels rapidly, and, indeed, as he did not have to return by another road there was not the greatest need. I was in San Diego three days longer because of the delay of the father president and the lack of an escort, and because the commander had informed me that if he went as soon as the provisions came he would leave me two or three soldiers so that I could catch up

<sup>1</sup> Valdés.

<sup>2</sup> This request is referred to in Anza's diaries.

<sup>3</sup> He evidently means Fages and Anza.



with the expedition, and therefore I never supposed that there was any failure on my part in the matter.<sup>1</sup>

Your Excellency has always supported the conquests of the Californias with your ever memorable measures, and you will be the author of those not so costly on the Colorado River. The viceroys, your predecessors, took part in other enterprises, but on the Gila and Colorado rivers your Excellency will be the first one to take such measures, and I say to myself that perhaps your Lordship will be the only one. May your Excellency receive this river under your protection, and may you reflect that you would perhaps weep if you could see so many heathen, for it is clear that there is a wide difference between hearing about them and seeing them.

May God preserve your Excellency for many years for the glory of both Majesties, as I desire. At this beautiful beach at the junction of the rivers.<sup>2</sup>  
April 27, 1774.

Most Excellent Sir, your most humble servant and chaplain kisses your hand.

FRAY FRANCISCO GARCÉS (Rubric).

To the Señor Lieutenant-general Don Antonio María Bucareli.

<sup>1</sup> He is explaining why he did not go with Anza to Monterey.

<sup>2</sup> At Yuma.

XXXIV

LASUEN TO THE COLLEGE OF SAN  
FERNANDO

MISSION SAN GABRIEL, MAY 2, 1774<sup>1</sup>

HAIL JESUS!

MY REVEREND FATHERS AND ESTEEMED SIRs:

I had thought that the letters which I write to your Reverences would be carried by one of the fathers of Querétaro who came to this mission by way of the Colorado River,<sup>2</sup> but this not having come to pass, because this good favor was anticipated by Captain Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, commander of the expedition by land by way of that river to these establishments of San Diego and Monterey, I think it well to give your Reverences this information, so that in so far as possible the appropriate treatment may be given to the bearer.

He is a most affectionate brother of the College of Santa Cruz, and a signal benefactor, and is the whole consolation of the missionaries of the Pimería, and it may be expected in the future that his favor may be similar for the Fernandino missionaries of this Northern California. He has comported himself here with very Christian honor. He has fulfilled

<sup>1</sup> Documentos Relativos á las Misiones de Californias. Quarto Sér., Tomo II. Museo Nacional, Mexico.

<sup>2</sup> Fathers Díaz and Garcés. Father Garcés set out before this date.

his commission to the satisfaction of everybody who may be interested in the important purposes of the enterprise. And he has already convinced everybody that in a short time this enterprise will produce considerable advancement for this new country.

I beg your Reverences to make all this known to the reverend father guardian, to whom he is also carrying a letter for me; and likewise that the reverend fathers of the Holy Cross, Fray Francisco Garcés and Fray Juan Díaz, have covered my nakedness for some months, and that they should give them appropriate thanks. One of them gave me a habit of sayalete and a hood, and the other a tunic and sandals. For another father, Fray Francisco left a mantle.

May God our Lord spare your Reverences in His holy grace for many years. San Gabriel, May 2, 1774. The hands of your Reverences are kissed by your most affectionate friend, loyal servant, and humble brother.

FRAY FERMÍN FRAN.<sup>co</sup> DE LASUÉN (Rubric).

## ANZA TO BUCARELI

TERRENATE, JUNE 8, 1774<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

Sir: On the 27th of May just past I returned safely to the presidio in my charge, having concluded the commission to which your Excellency was pleased to assign me. Immediately upon my arrival I should have taken the road to report to your Excellency on the expedition which has been accomplished, if I had not been prevented by the military inspection of my presidio which has been made by adjutant inspector Don Antonio Bonilla, whom I found there. A few days after he left, he sent me an urgent and secret order requiring me to come as soon as I should receive it to this presidio of Terrenate. I arrived six days after the date of his order, and he has left me in command here until he sends me relief from the presidio of Janos,<sup>2</sup> which he promises to do promptly, in order that I may then repair to that Court. But for the reasons set forth above I shall not be able to be there at the time I promised your Excellency in the communication which I sent you from the mission of San Gabriel, and for this reason I have thought it proper to inform your Excellency of my involuntary detention in these parts.

<sup>1</sup> A.G.I., 104-6-15. Certified copy.

<sup>2</sup> Terrenate is east of Nogales in Sonora. Janos is in Chihuahua, near the New Mexico line.

From the presidio of Monterrey, in the district of Northern California, I set forth on the 22d of April, and on the 10th of last month I reached the junction of the Colorado and Gila rivers, during which journey I shortened considerably the road which I took in going.

The only news to report from those parts is that a few days before my arrival at Monterrey the mast of a bark of rare size and construction washed ashore at the mission of Carmelo, where I was. It was broken apparently two-thirds off, and all of it was pierced through by many nails with one head and two points, and whose iron was seen to be very little rusted. I charged Commander Don Pedro Fages to send the whole of this piece at the first opportunity to the port of San Blas, in order to have it examined there to see if it might belong to the lost *San Josef*,<sup>1</sup> and if not to infer from its construction, which they say is unknown, whose it may be.

The frigate of his Majesty, the *Nueva Galicia*, had not arrived at that presidio, nor the *Príncipe*<sup>2</sup> at San Diego, but with the hope that they would do so in a short time, and seeing a road opened from Sonora to those regions, the soldiers and father missionaries remained in full contentment in the midst of the great scarcity of provisions which they were experiencing. All the tribes of those regions

<sup>1</sup> The *San José* was a supply vessel sent with the Portolá expedition of 1769. It was lost and never again heard of.

<sup>2</sup> The *Nueva Galicia* and the *Príncipe* were supply boats running between San Blas, Mexico, and the ports of California.

maintain the greatest tranquillity. About sixty leagues this side of Monterrey<sup>1</sup> I met the father president of the missions, Fray Junípero Serra, who had landed at San Diego. I brought from the presidio of Monterrey, by agreement with its commander, a party of six soldiers, in order that they might be instructed regarding the road as far as the Colorado River, whence I sent them back three days before I left that stream.

On the way back to my presidio I was able to observe by means of the instrument which we obtained in San Diego the latitudes of the most conspicuous places in the transit. Our observation on the rivers mentioned varies greatly from that made by the Jesuit fathers. But I am unable to tell your Excellency about it, because, since I was ignorant of the reason why I was called here, I did not bring any papers, but I hope to inform you very soon after I am relieved of this detail.

May our Lord prosper the important life of your Excellency many years. Royal presidio of Terrenate, June 8, 1774. Most Excellent Sir,

JUAN BAUTISTA DE ANSA.

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don Antonio Bucareli y Ursua.

I certify that this is a literal copy of the original which is in the Secretaría de Cámara y Virreynato which is in my charge. Mexico, August 27, 1774.

MELCHOR DE PERAMÁS (Rubric).

<sup>1</sup> The meeting was on the Santa Barbara Channel.

XXXVI

DIAZ TO BUCARELI

TUBAC, JUNE 12, 1774<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

The purpose of this letter is solely to inform your Excellency of our safe return to this presidio of Tubác, whence it is necessary for me to continue my apostolic way to Pimería Baxa,<sup>2</sup> because I find myself appointed by my Holy College as president of those missions and commissioned to complete the visitation which your Excellency has entrusted to it. For this reason I have suspended my contemplated plan of going in person, assuming the benediction of my prelate, to your respectable presence, to give you in detail individual reports of everything observed in our excursion. Notwithstanding that I have sent your Excellency the diary kept as far as the mission of San Gabriel, it seems to me very advantageous to send you now the enclosed supplement,<sup>3</sup> in which are recorded the latitudes of the principal places, and the different routes which appeared adapted to offer a direct road and avoid the great detours which were indispensable on going because of our ignorance of the country.

The heathen tribes which live on the banks of the Colorado and Gila rivers, although we have

<sup>1</sup> A.G.I., 104-6-17. Official copy.

<sup>2</sup> The country of the Lower Pimas, in middle Sonora.

<sup>3</sup> This is Diary E.

noted in them some tendency to thievery, as is stated in the supplement, are very much attached to our people, and I have no doubt they will be very glad to have them settle in their lands, and that with even greater willingness they will embrace the faith, by means of the appropriate measures. To this has contributed not a little the great Christianity, zeal, prudence, and singular conduct of our commander Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, who by his special talents has made himself worthy of the pious attention and patronage of your Excellency, whose important life I beg God to spare for me many years in His greatest glory.

Royal presidio of Tubác, June 12, 1774. The hand of your Excellency is kissed by your most humble servant and chaplain.

FRAY JUAN DÍAZ.

To the Señor Lieutenant-general, Viceroy and Governor, Don Antonio María Bucareli y Urzua.

I certify that this is a copy of the original which remains in this Secretaría de Cámara y Virreynato in my charge. Mexico, September 26, 1774.

MELCHOR DE PERAMÁS (Rubric).



XXXVII

DECLARATION OF JUAN BAUTISTA  
BALDES

MEXICO, JUNE 14, 1774<sup>1</sup>

Declaration taken by order of his Excellency by Don Melchor de Peramás, secretary of this viceroyalty, from Juan Bautista Valdés, a soldier formerly in the company of the presidio of Loreto,<sup>2</sup> who, having gone on the exploration by land from Sonora to Monterrey with the expedition of Captain Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, was sent by the latter from the mission of San Gabriel with dispatches for his Excellency.

Being asked if he had gone from the mission of San Gabriel to the port of San Diego, what is the distance between the two places, and for what purpose he was sent: He replies that on Holy Tuesday, which we reckon to be the 30th of March of this year, about four o'clock in the afternoon, he was sent as courier by Captain Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, in company with two soldiers of the expedition, one called Pascual Bailón, and the other Torivio Corona, with fifteen pack animals, to get provisions for the same expedition; that the distance from one mission to the other, according to common report, is forty leagues, but that it seems

<sup>1</sup> A. G. P. M., Cor. Vir., II. Sér., Bucareli, 1774, Tomo 38/55. Original. Copies are in A. G. I., 104-3-4 and 104-6-15.

<sup>2</sup> He had been in California formerly, evidently with the Portolá expedition, for he had been twice to Monterey and back.

to him, judging by the distance he traveled, that it must be sixty; that he entered San Diego on Holy Thursday about ten o'clock in the morning, and that on the following first of April, between three and four in the afternoon, he left this mission for San Gabriel with the animals loaded, arriving at San Gabriel on Tuesday in the morning before noon; that he found the road good; that some small arroyos of little account are passed and three rather large rivers, but they have fords. The first river encountered going from San Gabriel is named Santa Ana; the second, El Trabuco; and the third, San Juan de Capistrano.<sup>1</sup> There are many trees on the banks of the rivers; the rest of the country is covered with low brush, with many level plains and generally fertile land, so far as he saw. There are many bears and many kinds of birds.

Being asked whether the new frigate named *Santiago*, alias *Nueva Galicia*, was anchored in the port of San Diego, whether he went on board of her, and to state whatever he knew in the matter: He replied that he went on board the frigate and she was a good ship; and that from what he could learn from her commander, Don Juan Pérez,<sup>2</sup> and the others of the crew, the reason for this bark's dropping anchor at San Diego was the petition of the father president, Fray Junípero Serra, that she

<sup>1</sup> These streams are respectively the Santa Ana River, Arroyo del Trabuco, and the San Luís Rey River.

<sup>2</sup> Pérez was the famous pilot with the Portolá expedition. In this same year, 1774, he sailed clear to Alaska, taking part in notable discoveries.

should succor that mission with provisions; that she had been anchored there for some fifteen days, and that they were talking of cutting off the masts, as it appeared that their extreme length prevented her from sailing with ease; that she had had no trouble in any other respect, and that all said the frigate was a good ship, and that they had not met with any storm or accident whatever; that he saw Father Fray Junípero and his companion, Fray Juan Mugártegui, at the mission, and that the first was in good health and the other somewhat ill, though not confined to bed nor suffering with anything special; that the latter remained at the mission with the intention of going with the frigate, and the former set out about two days after the deponent left with his packs for San Gabriel, with the intention, as he understood, of going by land to Monterrey, which is one hundred leagues distant, although commonly reckoned to be sixty, which he knows because he has traveled over this road four times.

Being asked on what day Captain Don Juan Bautista de Ansa left the mission of San Gabriel for Monterrey, and with what company, he replied that he believes it was the 11th of April, and that he was accompanied by six soldiers, four from the expedition and two from the mission, whom he took as guides.

Being asked what was done with the others of the expedition, he replied that they stopped at the mission of San Gabriel, and that according to the orders left by the captain, Father Fray Juan Díaz

and two soldiers remained there, and the rest returned with the other father, Fray Francisco Garcés, to Sonora.

Being asked how many there were in all that returned, and what day they set out on the march, and if it was by the same roads by which they had gone, with any other details that he might know, he replies that the returning party was composed of Father Fray Francisco Garcés, two muleteers, and twelve soldiers, including the deponent, who was the one who brought the papers from Captain Ansa, being charged to take them to Mexico and place them in the hands of his Excellency the Viceroy, as he has done; that the departure from San Gabriel took place on the 18th of April, and that they followed the road by which they came the entire way except in two places where they made cut-offs, one from Santa Ana River, in order to strike the place called San José, by which they saved one day's march, and the other from San Sebastián to the Colorado River, by which they saved four; that until they reached the Colorado River they experienced no other trouble with the Indians than the firing of an arrow at a horse, apparently to kill it for food, as it was fat, when they were going through a narrow pass at San Sebastián, near the sand dunes.

He said also that at the Colorado River they met Captain Palma, who had a raft ready for our men to cross the river, which they did immediately, Palma having received them with the same joy and

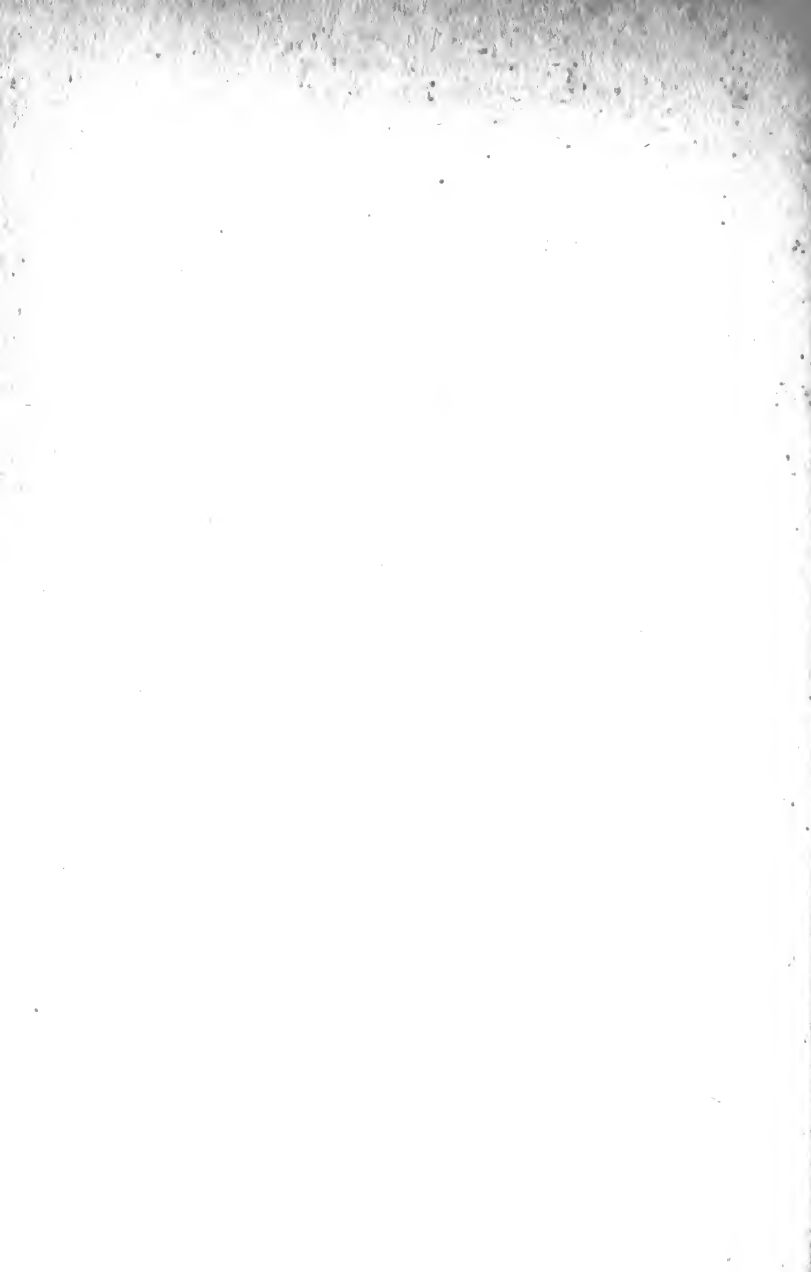
desde donde ya se dirigió solo hacia Me-  
xico.

### Nota.

Que de las quince Bestias que sacó de  
la Misión de S.<sup>ta</sup> Gabriel para la de  
S.<sup>ta</sup> Diego las ocho eran para cargar  
vivieres para la Expedición, y las  
siete para la Misión.

Preguntado si tiene alguna cosa mas que  
declarar responde que no y que lo q.<sup>e</sup>  
tiene dho: es la verdad y que lo jura  
p.<sup>r</sup> Dios y la S.<sup>ta</sup> Cruz, y lo firmó en,  
Mexico a catorce de Junio de mil sete-  
cientos setenta y quatro

Melehon & Puermas Juan Bautista Bal des



hospitality as he has always shown towards the Spaniards. He showed us that he was still keeping untouched the provisions that Captain Don Juan Bautista de Ansa had left on deposit there, even the cows and their calves. The horses, he informed us, had been taken by three soldiers and four muleteers to the presidio of Altar.

He also said that Father Garcés, the two muleteers, and nine soldiers remained on the banks of the Colorado River to await Captain Ansa, while the deponent came with the papers and two other soldiers to the presidio of Altar. From Altar the deponent traveled with only one soldier of that presidio to San Miguel de Horcasitas, from which he then went alone to Mexico.

Note: of the fifteen animals that he took from the mission of San Gabriel to San Diego eight were to carry provisions for the expedition and the remaining seven to carry provisions for the mission.

Being asked if he has anything further to state, he replies that he has nothing more, and that what he has said is the truth, to which he swears before God and the holy cross. He signed it in Mexico on the 14th of June, 1774.

JUAN BAUTISTA BALDES (Rubric).

MELCHOR DE PERAMÁS (Rubric).

# OFFICIAL REPORTS OF THE EXPEDITION

XXXVIII

URREA TO BUCARELI

EL ALTAR, FEBRUARY 22, 1774<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

Under date of the 9th of the present month Captain Don Juan Bautista de Anza writes me from the place called San Dionisio, at the junction of the Colorado and Gila rivers, which he crossed very successfully and to the great pleasure and satisfaction of Captain Palma, the Indian of whom I have already written to your Excellency, and whom he had regaled and clothed, as his good propensities merit. Indeed, this same Captain Palma has sent me the letter written to me by Captain Don Juan Bautista de Anza, who assures me that Captain Palma has conducted himself as he promised me to do when he was here, namely, that our people would be welcomed joyfully by himself and by his tribe.

The courier sent by Captain Palma brought the letters in such clean and neat condition that they appear to have been just written. The courier has been rewarded with a suit of clothes and a return of the compliments expressed to me by his Captain

<sup>1</sup> A.G.P.M., Cor. Vir. II. Sér., Bucareli, 1774, Tomo 37/54. Documentos del numo. 1389. Official copy.



Palma. Since Captain Don Juan Bautista de Anza will give your Excellency more extended reports, I refer you to them and those which concerning the matter are being sent by the captain to the governor, Lieutenant-colonel Don Francisco Crespo.

May our Lord spare your Excellency's life many years. Santa Gertrudis del Altar, February 22, 1774. Most Excellent Sir, the hand of your Excellency is kissed by your most reverent, attentive, and faithful servant and subordinate.

BERNARDO DE URREA.<sup>1</sup>

To the Most Excellent Señor Viceroy, Governor, and Captain-general, Don Antonio Bucareli y Ursua.

<sup>1</sup> Urrea was commander of the presidio of Altar.

## BUCARELI TO ARRIAGA

MEXICO, FEBRUARY 24, 1774<sup>1</sup>

No. 1279

The viceroy of New Spain reports the day on which Captain Don Juan Baptista de Ansa planned to set out on the expedition to explore the road to the port of Monterrey from the province of Sonora, and promises to report the results as soon as they are accomplished.

MOST EXCELLENT AND DEAR SIR:

Having for my part made all the dispositions which appeared to be necessary for the execution of the enterprise solicited by Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, captain of the presidio of Tubac, to discover a way from Sonora to Monterrey, and having communicated the appropriate orders, of which I have given an account to your Excellency in letter No. 1097,<sup>2</sup> I have now received advices from that official and from the father missionary Fray Francisco Garcés, who is to accompany him, in which they uniformly announce that they had arranged their departure for the 15th of last December, going pledged to employ all their strength to accomplish that laudable and important enterprise. For this

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I., 104-6-16. Original. A draft is in A. G. P. M., Cor. Vir., II Sér., Bucareli, 1774. Tomo 31/48.

<sup>2</sup> Printed in this volume, pp. 95-98.

purpose they were determined to make the journey as high up as possible,<sup>1</sup> for if they should find any obstacle they would always have the recourse of coming out at the first Yumas and going from there to San Xácome,<sup>2</sup> whence they would travel in safety.

Since these reports, which were sent to me in letters dated the 6th of last November, no others have come to me, which may be due to the great distance. But, being convinced that the departure of these persons took place at the time arranged,<sup>3</sup> I make this report to your Excellency, in order that you may be pleased to transmit it to his Majesty for the present, so that after the expedition has been accomplished I may give a report of its results.

May our Lord spare your Excellency many years.  
Mexico, February 24, 1774.

The hand of your Excellency is kissed by your most humble and grateful servant,

ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don Julián de Arriaga.

<sup>1</sup> That is, as high up the Colorado River, in order to go directly thence to Monterey.

<sup>2</sup> A village near Cerro Prieto, an outlying peak of Cocopah Mountains, in Lower California.

<sup>3</sup> They did not start till January 8.

## CRESPO TO BUCARELI

SAN MIGUEL DE HORCASITAS, FEBRUARY 25, 1774<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

It is with the greatest satisfaction that I transmit to your Excellency the letter written by Don Juan Bautista de Anza after he had crossed the Gila and Colorado rivers. By it your Excellency will see verified in every point possible my report No. 5, sent by the last mail, and I have no doubt that I shall be able very soon to inform your Excellency that it is verified in all particulars. The letters sent through the Yuma Indians themselves reached my hands on the night of the 23d and 24th of this month, twelve days after they had been dispatched. I omit setting forth to your Excellency the information which this officer gives me, because he assures me that he will report it to you directly with the proper detail.

May God spare the important life of your Excellency many years. San Miguel de Horcasitas, February 25, 1774. Most Excellent Sir, the hand of your Excellency is kissed by your most attentive and humble servant,

FRANCISCO ANTONIO CRESPO.

<sup>1</sup> A. G. P. M., Cor. Vir., II Sér., Bucareli, 1774, Tomo 37/54. Documentos del numo. 1389. Official copy.

## XLI

### BUCARELI TO PALOU

MEXICO, MAY 25, 1774<sup>1</sup>

By the hand of the Reverend Father Rafael Verger<sup>2</sup> I have received the report and description which your Reverence made with such method and accuracy of those new establishments and missions.<sup>3</sup> These notices leave me highly gratified for the complete knowledge which they give of the fertility and the superb advantages of the country for the erection of other missions; for the hopes so well founded which we may have for the progress of spiritual and temporal conquests in view of the docile, sincere, and fine character of the natives; and for the other reasons which your Reverence sets forth in detail in your letter of December 10 of the year of 1773 last past.

With all this in mind the Reverend Father Fray Junípero goes instructed<sup>4</sup> to apply all his care to the promotion of those missions and the erection of others, not counting those already projected, and not to spare any pains to bring about the attraction

<sup>1</sup> Santa Barbara Archives. Original. Received August 6, 1774.

<sup>2</sup> Guardian of the College of San Fernando de Mexico.

<sup>3</sup> This was the report made by Father Palóu on the missions of Alta California in December, 1773. It is printed in Bolton, *Palóu's New California*, III, 213-247.

<sup>4</sup> Father Serra had been in Mexico to confer with the viceroy. He was now back in California.

of the immense heathendom which inhabits those countries to the knowledge of our true religion and to the benign vassalage of our august sovereign. And now I am satisfied that, your Reverence being possessed of all the spirit of his royal intentions and of an apostolic religious, the purposes of your institute and my measures will be completely carried out, so that in a short time the happiness of the country and its inhabitants may come to be general, and I have no doubt that your Reverence's efforts to this important end will be supplemented by the holy zeal of the rest of the father missionaries.

I suppose that when your Reverence receives this you already will have had the pleasure of seeing those establishments completely supplied by means of the frigate in which Father Fray Junípero has been conducted and by the packet boat *El Príncipe*, which followed it, in consequence of my orders, with all the provisions it could carry, and that before long from San Blas will set out the one named *San Carlos*, which I have ordered equipped with the same object, because of the attention which those recent conquests and their promotion merit from me.

I believe that your Reverence will have received no less pleasure in seeing communication opened between that coast and the provinces of Sonora if, as I trust, the expedition of Captain Don Juan Bautista de Ansa has been successful, since under the date of February 9 and from the place which he

calls San Dionisio<sup>1</sup> he reports to me the success with which he had crossed the Colorado and Gila rivers, and also that with which he was traveling amongst tribes of unknown Indians, their affability, gentleness, and character, and the friendship which he is experiencing from the tribe of the Yumas and their Captain Palma, to whom is due a part of this service and success.

The new commander of those presidios, Don Fernando de Ribera y Moncada, also wrote me from the presidio of Loreto under date of March 20, that, having decided to make his journey by land, he was setting out with fifty-one persons whom he took from Cinaloa, directing his march straight to San Diego.<sup>2</sup> And comparing the dates it may be inferred on good grounds that these two officers may have met on the way, or in that establishment, or in Monterrey.

Whatever may have happened, since with the union of the two expeditions the number of men is sufficient to attend to everything, I hope that they will have explored more thoroughly the neighborhood of the place where the port of San Francisco is situated, and that, with the greater certainty than has been felt hitherto, they may have planned to erect there the missions suitable for occupying that region and for extending the conquest. Of the results I desire to be informed, and for this purpose

<sup>1</sup> This letter is printed in this volume, pp. 113-116.

<sup>2</sup> From Loreto, by way of the Peninsula.

I hope that your Reverence, continuing your praiseworthy labors, will report to me everything in detail, as I now beg and charge you to do.

May God spare your Reverence many years.  
Mexico, May 25, 1774.

EL BAILLO FREY DON ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA  
(Rubric).

To the Reverend Father Fray Francisco Palóu.



XLII

BUCARELI TO ARRIAGA

MEXICO, MAY 27, 1774<sup>1</sup>

No. 1389

The viceroy of New Spain transmits copies of letters from Captain Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, the governor of Sonora, and Don Bernardo de Urrea, to show the progress of the expedition by land from Sonora to Monterrey, the success with which Anza crossed the Gila and Colorado rivers, and the multitude of heathen whom he encountered in those hitherto unknown lands.

MOST EXCELLENT AND DEAR SIR:

In the summary of occurrences in the Interior Provinces<sup>2</sup> which accompanied letter No. 1357, I told your Excellency of the departure of the captain of the presidio of Tubac, Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, for the projected expedition to open communication by land with the port of Monterrey, and I am now doing so not only to enclose a list of what constitutes the little colony which he is taking, but also to report the success with which he accomplished the crossing of the Gila and Colorado rivers in latitude 35½ degrees, as he informs me in a letter dated the 9th of February, from the place which he calls San Dionisio, a copy of which I enclose.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> A. G. P. M., Cor. Vir., II Sér., Bucareli, 1774, Tomo 37/54, No. 1389. Draft.

<sup>2</sup> The provinces of the northern frontier of New Spain, extending from Texas to California.

<sup>3</sup> In giving the latitude of this place Anza merely cited the estimate made by the Jesuits.

By his letter your Excellency will learn of the great heathen population which he had seen up to that time, their friendly conduct, and the well-founded hopes he had of accomplishing his purpose, since he was already treading lands hitherto unknown to us, and since the reports given by those natives led to the belief that he was not far from a road which our people use, perhaps the one which goes from San Diego to Monterrey.

Your Excellency will note the report given by one of those natives to the effect that from the Colorado River a branch divides and runs up to the northwest and west. As there was no knowledge of its course to the Gulf of Californias, and as Ansa judged that it emptied into the South Sea, which he calls the Sea of the Philippines, it would not be strange if it should be the one which runs to the port of San Francisco, for the sierras which intervene apparently would not permit it to flow in any other direction.

All this is very commendable for the information which he gives and which he may furnish in the future for facilitating the advancement of new establishments at less cost, and for the reduction of such an infinity of heathen to the fold of the Church. And not less admirable is the success with which Ansa is making the journey, and especially that his letters should have been so faithfully carried to the presidio of Terrenate by those same barbarous Indians, as your Excellency will see from the copies

of the letters from the governor of Sonora, Don Francisco Crespo, and Don Bernardo Urrea, which likewise I enclose. I have approved the presents made to Captain Palma by both of these men, ordering the governor to continue to give them to him and to all of his tribe, on account of the king, on condition that he shall not give them any kind of weapons, and, on the other hand, that he shall give them to understand what charity and good treatment they ought to expect from the benevolence of his Majesty.

In letter No. 1391<sup>1</sup> I am reporting to your excellency that the new commander of Monterrey, Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada, was going from California for the same destination, with fifty-one persons; and that comparing dates it may be that he has joined Ansa and found for his assistance what was taken by the frigate and the packet boat which set out from San Blas, enabling him to continue with greater advantage everything that I have ordered, as reported to your Excellency in letters Nos. 939, 1019, 1048, 1097, 1259, and 1364.

Considering it so important to the service of the king that these fortunate beginnings shall not come to naught, in order to prevent any shortage of provisions I have directed the commissary of San Blas to have ready for the first good weather all that the packet boat *San Carlos* can carry, and to inform me of the opportunity for putting on the stocks a new keel, for I do not consider adequate the three ships

<sup>1</sup> Printed in this volume, pp. 173-174.

that we can count on up to now, since two must be diverted in the explorations.<sup>1</sup>

This inevitably entails new expenses, but I am taking measures to have it done with care and judgment, and with due economy; and since the object for which they are designed justifies them, I judge that they will be agreeable to his Majesty, especially since, according to advice which the guardian of the College of San Fernando has sent me, based on reports which he has received from his missionaries, the persons baptized in the new establishments are more than four hundred, among them being the chiefs of the villages, promising a much greater harvest when they have the means to support them, as your Excellency will see by my letter No. 1390, with which I enclose a copy of the report of those missions sent to me by their president ad interim, Fray Francisco Palóu.<sup>2</sup>

And thus I hope that your Excellency will be pleased to make this known to the king, in order that his royal and pious soul may rest, and in order that if my measures merit approval they may be carried out according as I am ordered.

May God spare your Excellency many years.  
Mexico, May 27, 1774. BUCARELY.

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don Julián de Arriaga.

<sup>1</sup> New explorations in the North Pacific.

<sup>2</sup> Palóu's report of December 10, 1773.

### XLIII

## BUCARELI TO ARRIAGA

MEXICO, MAY 27, 1774<sup>1</sup>

No. 1391

The viceroy of New Spain reports the number of persons which the commander Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada was taking to the new establishments of San Diego and Monterrey, and his reasons for thinking that on the road from San Diego he may have met the expedition of Captain Don Juan Bautista de Ansa.

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

My dear Sir: Results having been achieved in Cinaloa, pursuant to what was decided in the council of war and royal exchequer the new commander of the establishments of San Diego and Monterrey went to the presidio of Loreto in Old California. Although he intended to direct his route by sea to San Luís Gonzaga,<sup>2</sup> the uncertainty of the navigation in those seas caused him to change his plans, and so he decided to make his journey by land, according to what he reported to me in a letter of the 20th of last March, taking in his company as many as fifty-one persons, comprised in the families of the recruits.

<sup>1</sup> A. G. P. M., Cor. Vir., II Sér., Bucareli, 1774, Tomo 37/54, No. 1391. Draft.

<sup>2</sup> A bay on the northeastern coast of the Peninsula of California.

The date of this report, compared with that of advices sent by Captain Don Juan Baptista de Ansa from the place called San Dionisio, on the other bank of the Colorado River, as I reported to your Excellency in letter No. 1389, leads me to think that the two expeditions may have met on the way, or that they may have arrived one after the other at one of those presidios. And since from their union it may result that there will be, as there are, plenty of men for everything, he may already have explored and examined the place where with uncertainty the port of San Francisco has been located up to now, in order to occupy it with one or more missions, and to extend the conquest of such rich territory. I am waiting to learn the results of this operation, that I may report them to your Excellency, as I am doing with this notice, in order that your Excellency may be pleased to inform the king. May God spare your Excellency many years. Mexico, May 27, 1774.

[BUCARELY]

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don Julián de Arriaga.

XLIV

BUCARELI TO ARRIAGA

MEXICO, JUNE 26, 1774<sup>1</sup>

No. 1421

The viceroy of New Spain, with certified copies of the diary and letters sent from the mission of San Gabriel in New California by Captain Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, reports that the exploration of the road from Sonora to that coast has been accomplished, tells of the preparations made as a result of this expedition for future measures, and, recommending a reward for Ansa and his soldiers, asks for the former the rank of lieutenant-colonel and for the latter a bonus of one escudo.<sup>2</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT AND DEAR SIR:

Although not with such good fortune as he experienced as far as San Dionisio and further beyond the Colorado and Gila rivers, Captain Don Juan Baptista de Ansa has carried out the projected plan of exploring the intermediate country between our presidios of Sonora and those of the northern coast of California, as will be made evident to your Excellency by the accompanying documents which he has sent me from the mission of San Gabriel, where he arrived on the 22d of last March.

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I., 104-6-15. Original. A draft is in A. G. P. M., Cor. Vir., II Sér., Bucareli, 1774, Tomo 38/55.

<sup>2</sup> An *escudo* was a gold coin worth about eight *pesos* or a silver coin worth about a *peso*.

Number 1 is the diary which he kept,<sup>1</sup> and it includes all the events of his journey from the 8th of January, when he left his presidio of Tubac, the last but one on the frontier of the province.

By letter No. 1389<sup>2</sup> and the copies that accompany it your Excellency will have seen that the expedition met with no difficulty as far as San Dionisio, the place already mentioned, and will note the friendliness shown by the Yuma tribe through their Captain Salvador Palma, who gave them all the assistance possible. But this was not the case with the rest of the journey, even though they took the two natives mentioned in the diary. However, the difficulties that Ansa met<sup>3</sup> afterwards are only those usual when one is passing through unknown lands, especially when there is no one to serve as a sure guide in an undertaking; therefore, since all these drawbacks came from this lack, nothing that occurred should appear strange.

The weakness of the horses and mules and the lack of places to make camp, and of water and pasturage, which they experienced at every step, are very powerful reasons for realizing the privation and anxiety in which Ansa must have found himself many times. But with his good judgment, his persistence, and that of the troops who accompanied him, he was able to conquer the difficulties of the journey; and if the animals had not failed him he

<sup>1</sup> Diary B, printed in this work, II, pp. 133-211.

<sup>2</sup> Printed in this volume, pp. 169-172.

<sup>3</sup> Bucareli alludes to Anza's troubles in the sand dunes.



would have reached the mission of San Gabriel with abundant provisions for himself and for the relief of the mission.

If the decision to entrust half of his load to the good faith of Captain Palma, in order to travel unhampered, was hazardous, by the accompanying documents your Excellency will see that it was justified; and it appears to me as laudable as was the tenacity and bold spirit shown by his soldiers in repeatedly offering to travel on foot to the end of the journey.

Nor does the duplication of leagues caused by the necessary detours, as recounted by Ansa, seem strange to us in a first expedition and exploration in countries never before trodden by our men. The courier who brought Ansa's dispatches<sup>1</sup> says that although he came by the same road he saved five days by cutting across in places, and it is probable that when the country is better known it can be cut down by more than a third. In any case, there is no longer any doubt that the presidios of Sonora and Monterrey can join hands more easily by way of the route explored than is done now by way of Loreto and Old California.

According to Ansa's account, the tribes who inhabit the intermediate country are all harmless and pacific, and if any one is more friendly, and yet more warlike and spirited than the others, it is the Yuma tribe, which is attached to us. If it remains constant in this friendship and observes the good faith

<sup>1</sup> Juan Bautista Valdés.

which it has promised, once this tribe becomes completely attached to us there is no doubt that it will be a special instrument of the advantages which may be obtained by the erection of missions in suitable places, and in the pacification of the country, as is affirmed by Captain Don Juan Baptista de Ansa in the extended paragraphs of his diary under the entry for February 7, where may be seen the vigorous and persuasive speeches that he made to them, conferring a distinction upon their captain.

By these means a safe road from Sonora to the northern coast of the Californias will be opened, and, although I believe and consider that the route by sea from San Blas<sup>1</sup> will always be necessary, and for which I have ordered that the cost of a new keel shall be calculated, yet there will be this added means of succoring the new establishments by land in case of need, especially if the province<sup>2</sup> and its very fertile lands be made capable of producing abundant crops of all kinds whenever its cultivation is promoted, and if it continues to receive the increment from its fields which it has had in recent times, as I am informed by its governor ad interim, Don Francisco Crespo.

Nevertheless, as subsequent measures require circumspection, discernment, and judgment, and as Captain Ansa is to present himself in this capital, where I expect to see him on his return from his expedition, I shall decide nothing until he comes and gives me a detailed account of his progress and

<sup>1</sup> On the coast of Mexico.    <sup>2</sup> Sonora.

operations. Meanwhile, in view of the fact that it is necessary to maintain the good opinion and concept of the Spaniards that have been formed by the Yuma tribe, I have instructed Don Francisco Crespo to keep up the required friendly relations with their chief, Salvador Palma, and, telling him how agreeable his good conduct has been to me, to keep him pleased with little presents, on condition that they be not arms or ammunition. This is for the purpose of keeping him attached to us, until we consider the establishment of missions, to facilitate communication and lend a hand to those that may be erected within the limits of their territories by the Dominican and Fernandine friars, between whom the Peninsula of California is divided, and whom I have kept informed as far as necessary in the matter since the receipt of the first letter from Ansa, written on the 9th of February at San Dionisio.

By his diary and the letters designated by numbers 2 and 3 your Excellency will see that the frigate *Santiago*, alias *Nueva Galicia*, which I assigned to the expedition for the exploration of the coast to the north of Monterrey, reached the port of San Diego fifteen days before Ansa arrived with his land expedition at San Gabriel. Since, according to my orders, it ought not to have touched at that port except in case of great necessity, in order to confirm this report I caused to be taken from Juan Baptista Valdés, the courier who brought the papers from that officer, the declaration which follows his

diary,<sup>1</sup> under No. 4, for it seemed to me proper to learn the reason why it put into port. In it everything is explained, including the easy voyage of the ship as far as San Diego, although in my opinion it was delayed in its voyage by the necessity it was under of running north again in search of Monterrey.

The statement of the courier gives as a reason for this entrance that Father Fray Junípero Serra, president of those missions, had asked for it with the object of relieving the missions; but, as this friar left San Blas with the understanding that he was to disembark at Monterrey, I shall not be well satisfied with this action unless it is made clear to me that it was contributed to by the excessive length of the masts of the bark, for it seems that there was some talk of shortening them so that she might sail more freely.

In this same document your Excellency will learn of the measures taken by Captain Ansa in regard to his going on to Monterrey, and the return of Father Fray Francisco Garzés to Sonora with some soldiers, doubtless because of the small supply of provisions at San Gabriel for their support, and of their arrival at this mission with none at all, through having left half of their load in care of Captain Palma.

On the return of these troops the confidence placed in this chief by Don Juan Baptista de Ansa was found to be perfectly justified. His promise to

<sup>1</sup> Printed on pp. 155-159.

have a raft ready for crossing the river was fulfilled; and his good faith in the guarding of the provisions shines even more brightly, for he showed the herd of cattle that had been left in his care not only intact but increased by some calves that had been born.

All the information which is given by Ansa in his narrative concerning the various tribes who live on the other side of the Gila and Colorado rivers where he traveled, and the character and the natural mildness that he noted in them, convince one of the advantages obtained by this exploration, and those that may be expected to follow when communication is established between the different missions. The success of this enterprise was without doubt reserved for the happy reign of his Majesty. It had been discussed in the year 1737 in council of war and exchequer, in consequence of a royal *cédula*, and, although Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, father of the present Ansa, and captain of the same presidio,<sup>1</sup> suggested the plan, its execution was reserved by providence for his son, as your Excellency will have seen by the series of my reports, and those that I am now making, with reference to his own.

I consider the merit of this officer deserving of a reward; and it seems to me that it would be appropriate to the generosity of the king to confer upon him the rank of lieutenant-colonel, giving also a

<sup>1</sup> This is an error. Anza's father was at the time captain of the presidio of Santa Rosa de Corodeguache.

bonus of one escudo to each of the soldiers who so faithfully accompanied him in this prodigious undertaking, since this would be a convenient means of stimulating others to accomplish the explorations necessary for giving a hand to the establishments and in order that we may not be ignorant of the intermediate country.

I believe that your Excellency will be of the same opinion as I in this matter; and I hope that upon reporting all these events to the king the mind of his Majesty may be inclined to grant these favors, which I recommend as just, and that the steps which I have taken up to now in the matter may likewise merit his royal approval.

May our Lord spare your Excellency for many years. Mexico, June 26, 1774. Most Excellent Sir, the hand of your Excellency is kissed by your most humble and grateful servant,

EL BAILIO FREY DON ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA  
(Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don Julián de Arriaga.

The diary and other documents enclosed with the duplicate of this letter remained in the Council.

BUCARELI TO ARRIAGA

MEXICO, AUGUST 27, 1774<sup>1</sup>

No. 1489

The viceroy of New Spain transmits a copy of the letter written by Captain Don Juan Baptista de Ansa on his return from his expedition by land to the northern coast of the Californias, in which are given the reasons for his delay in Sonora, with other occurrences connected with the new establishments, and reports the measures that he has taken in regard to everything.

MOST EXCELLENT AND DEAR SIR:

I had supposed Don Juan Baptista de Ansa to be on his way to this capital to give me a detailed account of the events of his expedition, when I received a letter from him dated at the presidio of Terrenate on the 8th of June, of which I am sending your Excellency a certified copy.<sup>2</sup> By it your Excellency will see that his delay has been involuntary, and has proceeded from the order of the adjutant inspector, Don Antonio Bonilla, who at that time was making a review of the presidios of Sonora.

Being convinced, as I am, that there is no project of greater importance in this province today than the one which Ansa has just executed with such care, and that my orders to him to come to this capital

<sup>1</sup> A. G. P. M., Cor. Vir., II Sér., Bucareli, 1774, Tomo 40/57, No. 1489. Draft. The original is in A. G. I., 104-6-15.

<sup>2</sup> Printed on pp. 150-152.

as soon as he should have completed it being known to Bonilla, he ought not to have detained him for any reason, I have found it necessary to inform the comandante inspector, Don Hugo Oconor,<sup>1</sup> how annoying this act of Bonilla has been to me, so that he may let him know about it, and to instruct the governor ad interim<sup>2</sup> of the province to release Ansa immediately, so that he may begin his journey at once.

For this reason I can not report, as I desired, the results of the commission given to this officer, nor has he, for the reasons which he states, been able to send to my notice any thing except what is contained in his letter, in which he lightly touches upon his return to Sonora, the considerable saving in distance that he made on the return, the quiet and tranquil state of the northern tribes, and the lack of any trouble experienced in his passage through those who live in the intermediate country.

With the putting in of the frigate *Santiago* at San Diego, and the arrival which it is confidently believed has been made at Monterrey by the packet-boat *El Príncipe*, those establishments by now must have been relieved of the need from which Ansa says they were suffering. I live in constant care of this important matter, for I am aware of the attention those ports demand, in order that they may serve as shelter and aid for the ships that are

<sup>1</sup> O'Conór was then engaged with Apache troubles on the Sonora-New Mexico frontier.

<sup>2</sup> Urrea was now governor ad interim.



destined and that may be destined for the exploration and reconnaissance,<sup>1</sup> and to afford their inhabitants the means of maintaining themselves through their own industry, by which the royal treasury also will profit greatly. And in order that this may take place, I have repeated my orders to the commissary of San Blas, Don Francisco de Hijosa, to collect provisions and crops for their relief without the loss of a moment, and for this purpose I have fitted out two ships, which are to set sail one after the other.

In order to look into the matter of the mast which Captain Don Juan Baptista de Ansa speaks of in his letter, I have also given Hijosa the necessary instructions, charging him, when it arrives, to have the experts in that department declare under oath whether it is the mast of the lost packet boat *San José*,<sup>2</sup> or whatever opinion they may form of it.

Of all the particulars I shall send reports, and in the interim I hope that your Excellency will be pleased to inform the King of present occurrences and my measures, in order to learn whether they are to his royal satisfaction.

May our Lord preserve your Excellency for many years. Mexico, August 27, 1774.

[BUCARELY.]

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don Julián de Arriaga.

<sup>1</sup> The exploration of the northern coasts.

<sup>2</sup> The vessel which was lost in 1769 during the Portolá expedition.

XLVI

BUCARELI TO ARRIAGA

MEXICO, SEPTEMBER 26, 1774<sup>1</sup>

No. 1521

The viceroy of New Spain sends copies of the letter and diary of Father Fray Juan Díaz, who accompanied Captain Don Juan Bautista de Ansa on his expedition, in which are set forth the events of his return from Monterrey to the presidio of Tubac.

MOST EXCELLENT AND DEAR SIR:

With a letter of the 12th of last June<sup>2</sup> the Reverend Father Fray Juan Díaz, of the order of San Francisco, sent to me the diary which he kept on his return from Monterrey to the presidio of Tubac on the occasion of his having accompanied Captain Don Juan Bautista de Ansa on the expedition to open a road by land to those establishments. Knowing that until this officer comes to Mexico, as I have ordered him to do, and until the information which I need for the final disposition is acquired through his presence, they may take the place of what he ought to present to me, and that the king will be glad to receive the information which they contain, I am directing to your Excellency copies of the letter

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I., 104-6-17. Original. A copy is in A. G. P. M., Cor. Vir., II Sér., Bucareli, 1774, Tomo 41/58.

<sup>2</sup> Printed elsewhere. The diary referred to was Diary E.

and diary of this friar so that you may be pleased to give a report to his Majesty. May our Lord spare your Excellency many years. Mexico, September 26, 1774.

Most excellent Sir, the hand of your Excellency is kissed by your most humble and grateful servant.

EL B.<sup>o</sup> FR. D.<sup>N</sup> AN.<sup>TO</sup> BUCARELY Y URSUA (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don Julián de Arriaga.

XLVII

ARRIAGA TO BUCARELI

SAN ILDEFONSO, OCTOBER 2, 1774<sup>1</sup>

To the viceroy of New Spain, saying that the king is informed of what is set forth in his letter of the 27th of last May, and of the accompanying copy of the letter from Captain Ansa relative to the exploration which he mentions, and of that from Urrea, governor ad interim of Sonora; that the presents given to Captain Palma are approved, and likewise the measures which he took concerning the furnishing of provisions for the expedition.

The king being informed of your Excellency's letter No. 1389, dated the 27th of last May, and of the accompanying copies of letters from Captain Juan Baptista de Anza and Don Bernardo de Urrea, governor ad interim of Sonora, relative to the progress of the expedition of the former to explore communication by land from Sonora to Monterrey, his Majesty approves the presents given to Captain Palma and your Excellency's order to the governor of Sonora to continue them on his royal account; likewise the measures taken by your Excellency to supply the provisions necessary for the expedition

<sup>1</sup> A.G.I., 104-6-15. Draft.

and for ascertaining the facilities existing in San Blas for putting a new keel on the stocks, because your Excellency does not consider the three that can be counted on sufficient for the needs, since two of them must be diverted to the explorations which you mention.

God, etc. San Ildefonso, Oct. 2, 1774.

[ARRIAGA.]

To the Señor Viceroy of New Spain. In duplicate.

## XLVIII

### ANZA'S COMMISSION AS LIEUTENANT- COLONEL OF CAVALRY

SAN ILDEFONSO, OCTOBER 4, 1774<sup>1</sup>

Don Carlos, by the grace of God king of Castile, León, Aragón, the Sicilies, Jerusalem, Navarre, Granada, Toledo, Valencia, Galicia, Mallorca, Sevilla, Cerdeña, Córdoba, Corsica, Murcia, Jaén, the Algarves of Algeciras, Gibraltar, the Canary Islands, the East and West Indies, and the Islands and Terra Firma of the Ocean Sea, Archduke of Austria, Duke of Burgundy, Brabant and Milan, Count of Hapsburg, Flanders, Tyrol, and Barcelona, Lord of Bizcaya and of Molina, etc.

Whereas to you, Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, captain of the presidio of Tubac in New Spain, in view of your merits and services, I have come to grant you the rank of lieutenant-colonel of cavalry,

Therefore, I order the captains-general, commanders of the armies, and other officers, commanders higher and lower, officers and soldiers of my armies, that they shall regard and acknowledge you as such brevet lieutenant-colonel of cavalry, and that they shall guard and cause to be guarded the honors, graces, preëminences and exemptions which by reason of this rank belong to you, and that they

<sup>1</sup> A.G.I., 104-6-15. Draft.

ought to be well and completely guarded, for this is my wish; and that my viceroy, governor, and captain-general of the provinces of New Spain shall give the appropriate order, so that note may be made and a record of this rank set down in the principal accounting office of the royal hacienda to which it belongs. Given at San Yldefonso, the 4th of October, 1774. In duplicate.

His Majesty concedes the rank of lieutenant-colonel of cavalry to Don Juan Baptista de Ansa.

## XLIX

### ARRIAGA TO BUCARELI

SAN LORENZO, OCTOBER 8, 1774<sup>1</sup>

To the viceroy of New Spain, saying that in view of the merit shown by Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, captain of the presidio of Tubac, in the new exploration by land from the presidios of Sonora to the presidios of the northern coast of California he has been granted the rank of lieutenant-colonel of cavalry, and to each of the soldiers who faithfully accompanied him a monthly bonus of one escudo has been awarded.

In consideration of the special merit shown by Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, captain of the presidio of Tubac, in the expedition for the exploration of a road by land from the presidios of Sonora to those of the northern coast of California, which happy event he achieved on the 22d of last March, according to your Excellency's report, together with documents in your letter No. 1421, the king has deigned to grant him the rank of lieutenant-colonel of cavalry for which your Excellency nominates him, and I send herewith the dispatch which he has issued for him, so that, after the necessary formalities have been observed, you may have it delivered to the person interested.

<sup>1</sup> A.G.I., 104-6-15. Draft.



Likewise, in accordance with what your Excellency recommends, his Majesty has granted a bonus of one escudo to each of the soldiers who so faithfully accompanied Ansa on that expedition, and by his royal order I report it to your Excellency, so that you may arrange for its prompt fulfillment. God, etc. San Lorenzo, October 8, 1774.

[ARRIAGA]

To the Señor Viceroy of New Spain. In duplicate.

## L

## BUCARELI TO ARRIAGA

MEXICO, NOVEMBER 26, 1774<sup>1</sup>

No. 1609

The viceroy of New Spain forwards the diary delivered to him by Captain Don Juan Bautista de Ansa relating the events of his expedition by land from the mission of San Gabriel to Monterrey, and until his return to the presidio of Tubac; and he calls to mind the merit of this officer and his soldiers, suggesting that the rank of lieutenant-colonel be granted to him and a bonus of one escudo to each of the soldiers.

MOST EXCELLENT AND DEAR SIR:

With a letter of the 26th of last June, No. 1421,<sup>2</sup> I sent to your Excellency the diary which had been sent to me by the captain of the presidio of Tubac, Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, relating all the events that had happened to him in his expedition by land as far as the mission of San Gabriel, the first of the new establishments of the Californias on the route that he took from Sonora.

At that time I promised to send the report that he might make of his explorations and observations at Monterrey and the neighboring missions, and of his return to his presidio, and it is this which I am

<sup>1</sup> A. G. P. M., Cor. Vir., II Sér., Bucareli, 1774. Tomo 44/61. No. 1609. Draft. Original in A. G. I., 104-6-15.

<sup>2</sup> Printed on pp. 175-182.

now enclosing,<sup>1</sup> so that your Excellency may see how successfully it has all been done; how meritoriously the Yuma tribe has conducted itself through its captain Salvador Palma; how docile are these natives and their neighbors, although different in language and relationships; how fertile are these lands, formerly unknown; the means that have been discovered for communication between the new presidios and those of Sonora; and, finally, the strong hopes which may be entertained of extending, among the many heathen tribes that inhabit the intermediate country, the dominion of the king and the knowledge of our true religion (which is the principal purpose of his Majesty and the only real object of the expense that he is piously incurring) by means of the missions which I now have no doubt it will be easy to establish, in view of the many proofs given by the Yumas of their good disposition, friendship, and fidelity, especially as this tribe is the most powerful one along the road, and the one that can best serve as auxiliary and aid to greater enterprises.

Notwithstanding this security, and that all my efforts, since receiving the first information of their good disposition and services, have been directed toward preserving their good will by presents and kind treatment, it now appears to me necessary to explore the land still further and to establish a presidio at the port of San Francisco, which by all

<sup>1</sup> Printed in this work, II, 215-243.

means ought to be occupied to support our conquests in that region, as I explain in another letter of this date, No. 1608, treating of the arrival of the new frigate *Santiago*, and I am now planning a second expedition, to be carried out by Captain Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, with adequate assistance and a larger number of people, so that thirty of the men may remain in San Francisco as escort for two new missions and as a sign of protection in that port, taking also cattle and horses to aid with their progeny in the support of the new establishments.

This officer is here, as I state in the same letter to your Excellency, and is so eager for this second enterprise that he is only awaiting the instructions under which he is to make it, in order to win this new merit in the service of the King. His presence, good judgment, and talents, which I have now seen close at hand, have confirmed me in the opinion which I have had of him ever since the time when he proposed the exploration, and I do not doubt that he is fit and qualified to carry out the plans upon which we have entered, an undertaking which was without doubt reserved for the glorious reign of his Majesty.

At the proper time I shall report everything that may be arranged in this important matter; but now that I have an occasion to treat of the merit of an officer which makes him not only famous but deserving of the royal favor (for he has made many campaigns against the Indians and has four times been

wounded by them, and his father, Don Juan Baup-tista de Ansa, an officer of well-known valor, and captain of the same presidio of Tubac, was killed by the Apaches in a bloody action), I must not fail to inform your Excellency that it seems to me that it would be an effective means of stimulating other officers to similar services if Ansa were granted (as I proposed to your Excellency in letter No. 1421 of June 26 of this year) the rank of lieutenant-colonel, and if the soldiers who followed him so faithfully in the expedition were given the bonus of one escudo. I hope your Excellency will be pleased to influence the mind of the King to grant these favors, or whatever may be agreeable to his Majesty.

May our Lord spare your Excellency for many years, as I desire. Mexico, November 26, 1774.

[BUCARELY]

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don Julián de Arriaga.

MADRID, FEBRUARY 1, 1775<sup>1</sup>

In the *expediente* of the Dominican missionaries for the Californias.

In order to decide this *expediente* with the full knowledge and assurance which the Council desires, let a letter be written by the secretariat to Señor Arriaga informing his Excellency that if the diary kept by Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, captain of

<sup>1</sup> A.G.I. 104-3-4.

the presidio of Tubac, on the journey going to and coming from Monterrey, has come by *via reservada* and there should be no objection to sending a copy to the Council, it hopes that his Excellency will order this done.

(Rubric.)

Done.

LI

SAN MARTIN CUETO TO ARRIAGA

MADRID, FEBRUARY 4, 1775<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

The Council is considering an *expediente* formed because of the request of Fray Juan de Dios de Córdova, of the Order of Preachers and procurator of his province of Santiago de Mexico, that friars be sent at the expense of the royal hacienda to administer the missions which that province has under its charge in the Californias. The viceroy has reported the various requests made to him by some missionaries taken to the same province by Fray Juan Pedro de Yriarte, and other points; and in order to decide the matter with the full knowledge and the assurance which this tribunal desires, it has agreed to say to your Excellency, as I am now saying, that if the diary kept by Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, captain of the presidio of Tubac, of the journey going to and coming from Monterrey, has come to the secretariat of the office in your charge, and if there should be no objection to sending a copy of it to the same Council, it hopes that your Excellency will arrange to have this done. May God

<sup>1</sup> Oficio de Miguel de San Martin Cueto al Bailio Frey D. Julian de Arriaga. A. G. I., 104-3-4.

spare your Excellency many years, as I desire.  
Madrid, February 4, 1775. Most Excellent Sir,

MIGUEL DE SAN MARTÍN CUETO.

To the Señor Bailio Frey Don Julián de Arriaga.

REPLY<sup>1</sup>

Herewith I am sending to your Lordship the diaries kept by Don Juan Baptista de Ansa of his journey to and from Monterrey, which by agreement of the Council your Lordship requests in this paper, and it being understood that the first is a duplicate and the second the principal, your Lordship will have a copy of the latter made immediately, in order to return it to my hands. May God spare your Majesty many years. El Pardo, February 13, 1775.

EL SEÑOR BAILIO DON JULIÁN DE ARRIAGA (Rubric).

<sup>1</sup> Oficio de Miguel de San Martin Cueto al Bailio Frey D. Julian de Arriaga., A. G. I., 104-3-4.



LII

BUCARELI TO ARRIAGA

MEXICO, FEBRUARY 24, 1775<sup>1</sup>

No. 1738

The viceroy of New Spain reports the measures which he has taken with regard to the bonus of one escudo granted to the soldiers who went on the expedition to Monterrey with Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, and that he has delivered to the latter his commission as lieutenant-colonel of cavalry.

MOST EXCELLENT AND DEAR SIR:

After countersigning it I have delivered to the captain of Tubac, Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, the royal dispatch which your Excellency encloses with your letter of the 8th of last October, in which the king has deigned to grant him the rank of lieutenant-colonel of cavalry, and of this I have notified the comandante inspector, Don Hugo Oconor, in order that he may make it known.

Likewise, with the same note and the accompanying list of soldiers who from the same presidio went with Ansa on his expedition to Monterrey, I have sent a certified copy of this royal order to the Tribunal of Accounts, the royal officials of these chests, and that of Los Alamos,<sup>2</sup> in order that there

<sup>1</sup> A.G.I., 104-6-15. Original.

<sup>2</sup> Los Alamos is in southern Sonora.

may be paid to them the bonus of one escudo which his Majesty has deigned to grant them from the date of the royal order, it being understood to be monthly, in addition to the pay which they receive, and as long as they live, adding an order that it be noted in the summary of the review; and in order that the presidial soldiers may know how his Majesty rewards those who distinguish themselves in the service, I have provided that the comandante inspector<sup>1</sup> shall make it known to all his men, in the hope that, inspired by this grace, they may exert themselves with energy and care whenever occasion may offer; and of everything I am advising your Excellency in order that you may inform his Majesty, if you please. May our Lord spare your Excellency many years. Mexico, February 24, 1775.

Most Excellent Sir, the hand of your Excellency is kissed by your most humble servant.

EL BAILIO FREY DON ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA  
(Rubric)

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don Julián  
de Arriaga.

<sup>1</sup> Hugo O'Conór.

LIII

LIST OF ANZA'S FOLLOWERS

MEXICO, FEBRUARY 24, 1775<sup>1</sup>

Memorandum of the soldiers who accompanied Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Ansa from the presidio of Tubac on the expedition which he made from that presidio to the presidio of San Carlos de Monterrey in Northern California.

Marcial Sánchez, Corporal

Juan de Espinosa

Joseph Marcos Ramírez

Juan Antonio Valencia

Joseph Torivio Corona

Juan Joseph Rodríguez

Joseph María Martínez

Joseph Pablo Corona

Francisco Figueroa

Juan Martínez

Joseph Antonio Acedo

Ysidro Martínez

Joseph Antonio Romero

Pasqual Rivera

Juan Miguel Palomino

Joseph de Ayala

Juan Angel Castillo

Mexico, February 24, 1775.

MELCHÓR DE PERAMÁS (Rubric).

<sup>1</sup> Enclosure with No. 1738, above. A. G. I., 104-6-15. Original.

## NEVE TO SERRA

LORETO, APRIL 8, 1775<sup>1</sup>

MOST REVEREND FATHER AND DEAR SIR:

In a letter of the 25th of May of the year just past, his Excellency the Viceroy was pleased to send to my predecessor, Don Phelipe Barry, the reports made to his Excellency by Captain Don Juan Bautista de Anza, of the exploration and opening of communication which he effected from Sonora to San Diego and Monterrey, and that he had crossed the Colorado and Gila rivers, aided by the Yuma tribe as far as those streams, at the crossing of which there lived an infinite number of heathen of docile nature, gentle, and pacific; and that from the account given by one of them he judged that the road which our men followed from the first to the second presidio could not be far away. By this means are made known the vast lands newly discovered, and the opportunities offered for the extension of the spiritual and temporal conquests, especially when the fertility of their lands is another of the advantages which they present.

Since in the region which Ansa has crossed the reverend fathers of Santo Domingo are to establish

<sup>1</sup> Documentos Relativos á las Misiones de Californias. Quarto Sér., Tomo II. Museo Nacional, Mexico. Copy.

their missions, according to what has been decided,<sup>1</sup> and since your Reverences likewise ought to settle the district which has been assigned to you, it being necessary and indispensable to contribute by all means to a service of such importance, with this pious motive his Excellency, the Viceroy, commands that your Reverences, and likewise the reverend fathers of Santo Domingo, be aided by the governor of this Peninsula with his utmost care and vigilance. And he exhorts your Reverences that as good brothers you give reciprocal assistance to each other, so that in this way the intentions of the king or the expenses which the royal exchequer bears, or the well-founded hopes which are raised by such happy beginnings, may not miscarry; and that of the results I shall give to his Excellency opportune advices.

All of this I transmit to your Reverence, interceding for you with my prayers, in order that you may employ in this region the means which may be best adapted to carrying out the pious intentions of the king, and what was provided by the superior government of these realms, assuring your Reverences that for this purpose you will find in me the greatest promptness to aid your holy enterprises by all means possible. And not doubting the ardent zeal which animates your Reverence to seek the propagation of our holy faith, I believe that you will not omit any fatigue or labor whatsoever to

<sup>1</sup> In 1772 the Peninsula of California was assigned to the Dominicans, and Alta California to the Franciscans.

augment your pious establishments. In this belief, I hope from the favor of your Reverence that you will deign to communicate to me opportunely whatever you may have done or may do hereafter in the matter, so that I may report everything to his Excellency the Viceroy.

Remaining at the service of your Reverence, I await your orders, whose fulfillment will always be for me the most agreeable exercise. Royal presidio of Loreto, April 8, 1775.

[FELIPE NEVE.]

To the Most Reverend Fray Junípero Serra, father president of the new establishments of Monte Rey.

**CORRESPONDENCE OF THE  
SECOND EXPEDITION**





## PREPARING THE EXPEDITION

LV

ANZA TO BUCARELI

MEXICO, NOVEMBER 17, 1774<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

Complying with what your Excellency is pleased to order me with regard to the forty families who ought to go with me to occupy the River of San Francisco, let me say that the people whom I consider best suited for the purpose and most easy to get without causing a lack in their country, at the same time that the individuals sought may be benefited, are those of the *alcaldías* of Culiacán, Sinaloa, and Fuerte, in the province of Sonora.<sup>2</sup> Most of their inhabitants I have just seen<sup>3</sup> submerged in the direst poverty and misery, and so I have no doubt they would most willingly and gladly embrace the advantages which your Excellency may deign to afford them. However, if perhaps my opinion should not be considered sound your Excellency will tell me what I ought to do.

<sup>1</sup> Segunda Expedición á San Francisco por D.<sup>o</sup> Juan Bautista de Ansa. A. G. P. M. Provincias Internas. Tomo 134. Original. Copies of most of the documents in this file are contained in two expedientes in A. G. P. M., Californias Tomo 35, and Californias Tomo 72.

<sup>2</sup> An *alcaldía* was a district supervised by an *alcalde*, an official with both administrative and judicial functions. Culiacán, Sinaloa, and Fuerte are all cities now within the state of Sinaloa.

<sup>3</sup> Anza evidently refers to his journey through Sinaloa on his way to Mexico.

## 210 THE SAN FRANCISCO COLONY

In order to instruct them immediately in the first rudiments of military discipline, it seems proper to inform your Excellency that I should be furnished with five soldiers of the presidios of the province named, who will be able to serve as sergeants and corporals, unless it be convenient to return to the service some corporals who have been retired. And if your Excellency should deign to approve this proposal, I request that they may be chosen by me, in which case I will fill their places with the new recruits.

In order better to equip them, and likewise that they may be assisted with all the things they need, I think it best to send them the necessary articles of clothing, for to send their pay in cash will serve no purpose except to afford them more opportunity for prodigality and gambling, to which all the people of the interior districts are excessively given. These things may be given to them in the amounts which may appear best to your Excellency and through the person whom you may be pleased to name.

Since, in order to make the journey from Sonora to the River of San Francisco, part of the way must be through regions and heathen tribes where I have already passed, it is indispensable to take soldiers who have knowledge of both the country and the Indians, to aid me and to assist in the new journey, and to effect it with the tranquillity which we all desire. For this reason I beg your Excellency to please issue appropriate orders, permitting me to

take from my presidio ten of the soldiers who accompanied me on the last expedition, to be replaced by an equal number of new soldiers, in the following way: Five of these recruits and an equal number of veterans from the presidio of Terrenate, to which will be added the other five recruits, for since this last presidio has a hundred soldiers, this small number of recruits will not be harmful to it.

The best time for this expedition is that in which I set out to make the journey which I began at the opening of the present year. But since to wait so long would be to delay this matter which your Excellency desires to forward as much as possible, it seems to me that I ought to start from the presidios of Sonora in the month of September next, by which time there will already be water and pasturage as far as the other side of the Colorado River, so as to enter the districts of Northern California at the beginning of the rainy season, for if I arrive there long after the rains have begun they will be very troublesome because of the very boggy nature of that country.

The provisions which I carried for the persons whom I took on the former expedition were sufficient to maintain them four months. The additional supplies which are now necessary should be computed, and I may say the same with regard to the mules needed to carry them.

What now appears to be the most difficult in arranging for the present journey is to obtain suitable saddle animals in the alcaldías which I men-

tioned at the beginning, and that they should arrive in good condition at my presidio, which is distant about three hundred leagues from the first place mentioned. And this can be done only if your Excellency will strictly order the respective alcaldes to require the hacendados to exhibit and sell the animals which they have reserved for use on their haciendas, because if they should have to rely on those which are set aside to sell, it would be necessary for us to wait to the end of the month of July in order to take them out in the condition desired.

If your Excellency should be pleased to approve the plan which I here propose for the equipment of this new troop, it will be very important that the necessary effects be sent without loss of time, so that they may be at Culiacán or Sinaloa in the month of March next, in order that when I arrive there in the same month I may supervise their distribution among the recruits whom I shall then begin to raise, and who, I beg to tell your Excellency, both themselves as well as their families, will have to be equipped from shoes to hair ribbons. And if the judges do not assist to prevent desertions, I think there may be some losses. With this in view I beg your Excellency to make your orders strict, and give me the authority which for this and other matters you may consider appropriate, for experience has shown me that there are very few justices who coöperate effectively to give the assistance which is asked of them, especially with respect to the soldiers, in whom they are little interested.

The magnanimity and piety of your Excellency has wished to benefit the heathen tribes wherever I may go, as is shown by the orders which you have sent to the governor of the provinces of Sonora, who in turn has transmitted them to the presidios, to the effect that they shall be given presents whenever they may come to them. But since this rarely happens, and only in the case of five or six of the villages of Captain Palma, I am making this known to your Excellency, in order that you may deign to furnish me a small supply of tobacco, and of blue, red, green, and yellow glass beads, so that in your name I may give presents to all of them, for in this way I think that we shall best win their affection and attach them to ourselves for any purpose we may have in view. In this favor, considering the special services of Captain Palma mentioned, I have no doubt that he will be given particular consideration, and will merit from your Excellency something special, which for him should be a suit, a cloak, and a cap.

May our Lord spare your Excellency many years.  
Mexico, November 17, 1774. Most excellent Sir,

JUAN BAP.<sup>TA</sup> DE ANZA (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don  
Antonio María Bucareli y Urzua.

## DECREE BY BUCARELI

MEXICO, NOVEMBER 28, 1774<sup>1</sup>

The troops thought necessary to reinforce the presidio of San Carlos de Monte Rey in Northern California are a lieutenant, a sergeant, and twenty-eight soldiers, the object being that without prejudice to the present forces which sustain the missions already established, there may be detached from them the soldiers needed for the two new missions projected for the vicinity of the port of San Francisco, establishing there a post to indicate that it is occupied, and that it may be a base or beginning for further explorations.

The lieutenant and sergeant ought to be chosen from the troops of the presidios of Sonora, taking from the same presidios the soldiers who may voluntarily wish to go there to live, provided that the number shall not exceed eight, lest a shortage be caused in their present domicile. The remaining twenty ought to be recruited by Captain Don Juan Bautista de Anza. In addition he ought to perform for the king the new service of conducting them to Monte Rey by the road which with such glory he explored a few months ago, to deliver them to the commander of those establishments, Don Fernando

<sup>1</sup> Segunda Expedición á San Francisco por D.<sup>a</sup> Juan Bautista de Anza. A. G. P. M. Provincias Internas, Tomo 134. Original.

de Moncada; assist in the exploration of the River of San Francisco, in order to be able to report to me what he may have seen; and return by the same road with the ten soldiers which he is to take, selected from his presidio, besides those which have been provided for.

In keeping with this disposition Don Juan Baptista de Anza shall arrange with Don Juan Joseph de Echeveste to present in detail after this decree an estimate of the expenses which this enterprise will cost, so that in view of it in a council of war and royal exchequer it may be decided what is best for the service of the king.<sup>1</sup> Following the estimate they shall set forth at length in a note the suggestions which they think calculated to facilitate the gathering of the provisions which ought to be assembled.

Since it appears that for the new missions which are to be established the ministers are already in Monte Rey, it is not necessary to treat of taking them or of their supplies. But since it appears desirable that Father Garcés or another companion should go with the expedition as far as the Colorado River and there await the return of Don Juan Bautista de Anza, as he did on the first expedition, this captain shall set forth what he may think best in the matter.

ANTONIO MARÍA BUCARELY (Rubric).

<sup>1</sup> Echeveste's estimate of the cost of an outfit for the expedition is printed hereinafter, pp. 225-233.

LVII

ANZA TO BUCARELI

MEXICO, DECEMBER 1, 1774<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

Whereas, by superior decree of your Excellency dated the 28th of last month you were pleased to commission me to recruit the troops which ought to go to reinforce the presidio of San Carlos de Monte Rey in Northern California, for which a lieutenant is to be nominated to you, and who by the same decree is to be chosen from the companies of the province of Sonora, it being desirable to select a person of valor, good conduct, application, and experience in the services which are to be assigned to him, I therefore, exercising the authority which I enjoy as captain, propose to your Excellency:

As first choice, Don José Joaquín Moraga, alférez of the company of the royal presidio of Santa Rosa de Corodeguachi, alias Fronteras.<sup>2</sup> He has served his Majesty for eighteen years in the positions of soldier and alférez. In all of them he has gallantly fulfilled his obligations, and he deserves consideration in that his father died in battle, being a subaltern of the presidio named.

<sup>1</sup> Segunda Expedición á San Francisco por D.<sup>n</sup> Juan Bautista de Ansa. A. G. P. M. Provincias Internas, Tomo 134. Original.

<sup>2</sup> A presidio in Sonora east of Nogales and a short distance south of the present international line.



As second choice, Don Cayetano Limón, alférez of the company of San Carlos de Buena Vista,<sup>1</sup> who has served his Majesty for more than twenty years, most of the time as soldier, corporal, and sergeant. In all his services he has scrupulously fulfilled his obligations, having been in many battles, in which at least twice he has been wounded.

As third choice I make no nomination to your Excellency, for I do not know of any other officer who might be assigned to the position, since the rest of the alféreces are commissaries of their presidios, because their lieutenants can not hold these places.

The two persons nominated are worthy of being considered, especially Don José Joaquín Moraga, and I recommend him as first choice because of his long service as an officer, his greater intelligence, and his ability to write.

Mexico, December 1, 1774.

JUAN BAP.<sup>TA</sup> DE ANZA (Rubric).

Mexico, December 30, 1774. I appoint as lieutenant of the troops which are being recruited in Sonora for the purpose of reinforcing the presidio of Monterrey, Don Josef Joaquín Moraga, proposed as first choice. Let the appropriate commission be issued by the office of my superior government to which the matter belongs. [BUCARELI.]

<sup>1</sup> Evidently the Buenavista between Tubac and Terrenate.

LVIII

ANZA TO BUCARELI

MEXICO, DECEMBER 1, 1774<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

Whereas, by superior decree of your Excellency dated the 28th of the last month you were pleased to commission me to recruit the soldiers who are to go to reinforce the presidio of San Carlos de Monte Rey in Northern California, for which a sergeant is to be nominated to you, who, according to the same decree, ought to be chosen from the companies of the province of Sonora; and it being desirable to appoint a person of valor, good conduct, and honorable procedure, I therefore, exercising the authority which belongs to me as captain, propose to your Excellency:

As first choice, José Ygnacio Espinosa, corporal of the first company of the royal presidio of Terrenate, who has served his Majesty for seventeen years in that office and in the position of soldier. He has been in many engagements in which he has served gallantly and he has twice been wounded.

For second choice, Antonio Brabo, corporal of the company of San Carlos de Buena Vista, who has served his Majesty for ten years, most of the time in this office, in which he has punctually fulfilled his obligations.

<sup>1</sup> Segunda Expedición á San Francisco por D.<sup>a</sup> Juan Bautista de Ansa. A. G. P. M. Provincias Internas, Tomo 134. Original.

As third choice, Pablo Grijalva, who is second corporal in the company of Terrenate already mentioned. He has served the same number of years as the former, with little difference, and in merit and wounds they are equal.

These three persons nominated are worthy of consideration, but especially José Ygnacio Espinosa. I recommend him as first choice because of his seniority and his greater knowledge of the service, although he does not know how to write, whereas the two persons nominated after him have this qualification.

Mexico, December 1, 1774.

JUAN BAP.<sup>TA</sup> DE ANZA (Rubric).

Mexico, December 30, 1774. I appoint as sergeant of the troop which is to reinforce the presidio of San Carlos de Monterrey, Josef Ygnacio Espinosa, proposed as first choice, and let the appropriate commission be issued to him. [BUCARELI.]

LIX

ANZA TO BUCARELI

MEXICO, DECEMBER 5, 1774<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

By your Excellency's superior decree which under date of the 28th of the last month you were pleased to direct to me, in order that after it I should write out my opinion concerning the points which are treated in it, I am informed of the number of men with which the presidio of San Carlos de Monterrey ought to be increased in order to make it possible to take from it those who may be needed for the establishment which is to be made on the San Francisco River or in its vicinity.

In view of what your Excellency sets forth in the second paragraph, I am sending to your hands nominations for a lieutenant and a sergeant, who are to be chosen from the presidios of the province of Sonora and who only, I find, are suited for the offices proposed for them.

The foregoing decree of your Excellency informs me of the number of soldiers who ought to be taken from the same presidios and that they should go voluntarily. But I know that in this way one risks the outcome, because of the many reasons which

<sup>1</sup> Segunda Expedición á San Francisco por D.<sup>a</sup> Juan Bautista de Ansa. A. G. P. M. Provincias Internas, Tomo 134. Original.

each individual has for not leaving the presidio where he serves, and where they will always have the support of their captains, who will not voluntarily release any but soldiers who are useless or of bad habits and conditions. And since with these I am not able to recruit others suitable for the important purposes which are aimed at in the new establishments, where it is necessary not only to maintain military discipline, but also that they shall be adorned by good customs, habits, and conduct with the Indians, in order better to attract them to the rule of his Majesty and knowledge of the true faith; therefore, for the glory of your Excellency, and hoping that the beginnings of these enterprises may be happy, I make this known to you, so that, as I have already begged of your Excellency, you may grant me the choice of these ten soldiers, with whom I have no doubt I shall be able to achieve the results which I promise myself, and that his Majesty may be better served, which is my only wish.

The third point of the superior decree of your Excellency tells me of the troops which I am to recruit, and that you have deigned to appoint me to escort them to Monterrey by the road which I discovered a few months ago, to deliver them to Commander Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada, assist in the exploration of the River of San Francisco, in order to inform your Excellency of what I may see there, and then return with the ten soldiers of my company. And since strict obedience

is a matter of my obligation, I accept these duties most gladly, desiring to justify by my fulfillment of them the confidence which I merit from your Excellency.

Guided by what has formerly been ordered by your Excellency and by what is contained in the fourth paragraph, Don José de Echeveste and I have conferred with a view to forming an estimate of the expense which will be incurred by the measures under discussion, and having calculated them with the greatest detail and care, the amount seems to be twenty-one thousand, nine hundred and twenty-seven pesos and two reals. They are set forth in detail in the accompanying memorandum, in which are included six thousand, three hundred and fifty-nine pesos and four reals which the royal exchequer has in goods, destined to serve for the expedition and for the transportation of the provisions to Monterrey. This sum being subtracted from the total, the outlay amounts to only fifteen thousand, five hundred and sixty-seven pesos and six reals, even estimating the items of which the memorandum is composed with some liberality.

In the fifth paragraph your Excellency is pleased to order us to write out the suggestions which we think may facilitate the gathering of the provisions which ought to be assembled. In virtue of this it occurs to me to say to your Excellency that most of these suggestions are included in the note already cited, and that with respect to the provisions which

are to be obtained in the province of Sonora, in order that they may be prompt and fresh when I am ready to undertake the inspection, you should order the governor of the provinces to furnish me whatever may be required of him from the town where he resides and from the missions of Pimería Alta, because these are the places which can most easily supply them, and since the same missions will thus be able to sell some of the things useful only for provisioning the persons who may make up this expedition.

Since for me personally to gather these things it would be necessary to embarrass myself unduly, and divert the attention demanded of me by the recruiting of the new troops in different places, it is indispensable that for this purpose your Excellency shall be pleased to name a satisfactory person who may be charged with assembling them. He should keep an account in order to present it himself to the intendant or to the royal official of Los Alamos, and he should be repaid for his labor with some gratification. And since Don Miguel Gregorio de Echarri, who is now in this capital, managed these matters with credit in the garrison of Pitic during the military expedition of those provinces, if your Excellency considers him suitable you might give him this commission.

Likewise, to recruit the new troops, as well as to attend to certain other matters in which I must be engaged, I shall find it necessary to give some

orders beforehand in the name of your Excellency. And you alone can aid me by the suitable appointment of a lieutenant and a sergeant, whose nominations I have the honor to place in your Excellency's hands, and by commanding that in consequence of what I have said, there shall remain to me the choice of the eight soldiers who are to go out from the presidios to complete the thirty soldiers of the new troop, in order that I may make the appropriate arrangements at once, so that on my return to that province they may be on hand in the places which I am indicating to them.

Being informed of what is ordered in the last paragraph of the superior decree of your Excellency with regard to the friar who is to accompany the expedition, I consider it better that in addition to Father Garzés another shall go, namely, his companion, called Fray Pedro Fonte,<sup>1</sup> who is in the missions of Sonora, and who, they say, knows how to take latitudes. On this assumption, if your Excellency is pleased to appoint him for the enterprise, the instruments which you may consider necessary for the purpose may be sent to him by my hand.

Mexico, December 5, 1774.

JUAN BAP.<sup>TA</sup> DE ANZA (Rubric).

<sup>1</sup> Fray Pedro Font was missionary at San José de Pimas. He went with the expedition and wrote a remarkable diary.



LX

MEMORANDUM BY DON JOSE DE  
ECHEVESTE

MEXICO, DECEMBER 5, 1774<sup>1</sup>

Itemized memorandum of the probable cost of adequate clothing for thirty recruits and their wives, and for one hundred eighty children, half male and half female, six suits for each one; and of arms, mounts, rations, and baggage for the use and transportation of all from the province of Ostimuri<sup>2</sup> to the presidio of San Carlos de Monterrey; as follows:

CLOTHING FOR ONE MAN

|   | Pesos | Reals |
|---|-------|-------|
| 3 good linen shirts at 18 reals each .....  | 006   | 6     |
| 3 pairs of underdrawers of Puebla cotton, four varas in each one, at 2 reals each ..... | 003   | 0     |
| 2 cloth jackets, which, with their linings and trimmings, are worth .....               | 009   | 3     |
| 2 pairs of breeches, worth .....  | 005   | 3     |
| 2 pairs of hose at 2 reals each .....   | 000   | 4     |
| 2 pairs of buckskin boots at 10 reals each  | 002   | 4     |
| 3 pairs of buttoned shoes at 5 reals each   | 001   | 7     |
| 1 cloth cape lined with baize, worth .....  | 011   | 0     |
| 1 hat .....   | 000   | 6     |
| 2 blankets <sup>3</sup> at 2 reals each .....   | 000   | 4     |
| Ribbon for hat and hair .....   | 000   | 4     |

042 1

<sup>1</sup> Segunda Expedición á San Francisco por D.<sup>n</sup> Juan Bautista de Ansa. A. G. P. M., Provincias Internas, Tomo 134. Original. Copies are in A. G. P. M., Californias, Tomo 72, Doc. No. 1640, and A. G. P. M., Californias, Tomo 35.

<sup>2</sup> Ostimuri was a district in the province of Sonora.

<sup>3</sup> Paños de polvos poblanos.

## 226 THE SAN FRANCISCO COLONY

### CLOTHING FOR ONE WOMAN

|   | Pesos | Reals   |
|---|-------|---------|
| 3 chemises at 4 reals each .....  | 012   | 0       |
| 3 white petticoats of Puebla cotton at 12<br>reals each .....                                     | 004   | 4       |
| 2 skirts, one of serge and the other of<br>baize, and one underskirt, all at the<br>cost of ..... | 016   | 0       |
| 2 varas <sup>1</sup> of linen for two jackets, at 5<br>reals each .....                           | 001   | 2       |
| 2 pairs of Brussels stockings, at 4 reals<br>each .....   | 001   | 1       |
| 2 pairs of hose at 2 reals each .....   | 000   | 4       |
| 2 pairs of shoes at 6 reals each .....  | 001   | 4       |
| 2 rebozos <sup>2</sup> at 12 reals each .....   | 003   | 0       |
| 1 hat worth .....   | 000   | 6       |
| 6 varas of ribbon worth .....   | 000   | 6       |
|   |       | <hr/>   |
|   |       | 041 3   |
| For 30 suits for men and 30 for women, at 83 pesos  |       |         |
| 4 reals a couple .....  |       | 2,505 0 |

### CLOTHING FOR NINETY BOYS

|  | Pesos | Reals |
|--|-------|-------|
| 5 pieces of cloth containing 180 varas<br>at 12 reals each .....                               | 270   | 0     |
| 12 pieces of Puebla cotton for linings<br>and white breeches at 6 pesos, 4<br>reals each ..... | 078   | 0     |
| 270 varas of linen for shirts, 3 varas<br>each, at 5 reals.....                                | 168   | 6     |
| 50 hats at 4 reals each .....  | 025   | 0     |
| 8 dozen pairs of shoes for boys of all<br>sizes at 4 pesos a dozen .....                       | 032   | 0     |
|  |       | <hr/> |
|  |       | 573 6 |

<sup>1</sup> The vara is the Spanish yard, or about thirty-three inches.

<sup>2</sup> A rebozo is a head scarf or shawl.

## CLOTHING FOR THE SAME NUMBER OF GIRLS

|  |     |               |
|--|-----|---------------|
| 270 varas of linen for chemises, at 5 reals                                      | 168 | 6             |
| 4 pieces of cotton cloth for petticoats<br>and linings at 6 pesos, 4 reals ..... | 026 | 0             |
| 90 pieces for rebozos of all sizes at 10<br>reals each .....                     | 112 | 4             |
| 2 pieces of baize for little skirts at 45<br>pesos each .....                    | 090 | 0             |
| 4 pieces of cloth of 34 varas each for<br>underskirts, at 12 reals a vara .....  | 204 | 0             |
| 12 pieces of ribbon for trimming, worth  | 020 | 0             |
| 16 pieces of the same with a satin<br>border, worth .....                        | 005 | 0             |
| 8 dozen pairs of shoes for girls of all<br>sizes, at 4 pesos each .....          | 032 | 0             |
| 120 single blankets, for all, at 15 reals<br>each .....                          | 225 | 0             |
| 120 coarse blankets <sup>1</sup> at 5 reals .....                                | 075 | 0             |
|  |     | <hr/> 1,532 0 |

## ARMS

|   |     |       |
|---|-----|-------|
| 20 carbines at 12 pesos each.....   | 240 | 0     |
| 20 gun cases of good quality of the kind<br>called ords at 15 reals each .....                              | 037 | 4     |
| 20 swords, worth .....  | 085 | 0     |
| 20 lances, worth .....  | 040 | 0     |
| 22 leather jackets, each of seven thick-<br>nesses and a vara and a quarter<br>long, at 24 pesos each ..... | 528 | 0     |
| 30 Shoulder belts with the name San<br>Carlos de Monterrey, at 11 reals<br>each .....                       | 041 | 2     |
| 20 cartridge boxes with fourteen charges<br>at 10 reals each .....  | 025 | 0     |
|   |     | <hr/> |

996 6

<sup>1</sup> Pastoras.

## 228 THE SAN FRANCISCO COLONY

### MOUNTS AND THEIR EQUIPMENT FOR THE MEN

|   | Pesos | Reals |
|---|-------|-------|
| 60 horses, two for each recruit at 8 pesos each ..... | 480   | 0     |
| 20 saddles at 9 pesos 4 reals each .....              | 190   | 0     |
| 20 pairs of spurs at 7 reals each .....               | 017   | 4     |
| 20 fine mule bridles at 11 reals each .....           | 027   | 4     |
| 20 pairs of saddle bags at 2 pesos each....           | 040   | 0     |
|   |       | <hr/> |
|   |       | 755 0 |

### THE SAME FOR THE WIVES AND FAMILIES

|   |     |         |
|---|-----|---------|
| 60 mares at 8 pesos each .....              | 480 | 0       |
| 30 saddles at 9 pesos 4 reals each .....    | 285 | 0       |
| 30 fine mule bridles at 11 reals each ..... | 041 | 2       |
|   |     | <hr/>   |
|   |     | 1,561 2 |

### [RATIONS]

|  |  |       |
|--|--|-------|
| 60 rations, 3 for each family, at one and one-half reals, for forty days, which it is estimated will be required for the march of 200 leagues, with the necessary rests, from Los Alamos <sup>1</sup> to the presidio of Tubac ..... |  | 450 0 |
|--|--|-------|

### BAGGAGE

|   |     |       |
|---|-----|-------|
| 20 mules at 25 pesos each .....   | 500 | 0     |
| 20 pack saddles with attachments at 4 pesos 2½ reals each .....                                   | 086 | 2     |
| 30 leather portmanteaus for the clothing of the soldiers and their families at 2 pesos each ..... | 060 | 0     |
|   |     | <hr/> |
|   |     | 646 2 |

<sup>1</sup> Los Alamos is in southern Sonora.

## [SALARIES]

Pesos Reals

For three months advance to the lieutenant, sergeant, and 28 soldiers, the first of whom enjoys an annual salary of 700 pesos, the second 450, and to each soldier one peso a day .....

2,807 4

---

10,498 6

## [OUTFIT]

Outfit required for the expedition at the presidio of Tubac, including necessary utensils, cattle, provisions, and their transport, in order to ration all his people for the expected march of 70 days, with the rests, of 122 persons to which it amounts, the expense of everything in detail, including the supplies that he is to conduct to the presidio of San Carlos at Monterrey, as follows:

|  |     |   |
|--|-----|---|
| 1 banner with the royal arms .....   | 012 | 0 |
| 11 camp tents for the cavalry, of unbleached canvas with wooden frames, which the factory of the royal hacienda has and which would be of some service in this expedition: 10 for the 30 families and another for the father chaplain, at 27 pesos ..... | 292 | 0 |
| 4 Biscayan hand axes with a good steel edge, at 3 pesos each .....   | 012 | 0 |
| 4 hoes of the same kind at 9 reals each  | 004 | 4 |
| 4 spades of the same kind, at 3 pesos each .....   | 012 | 0 |
| 1 crowbar, worth .....   | 005 | 0 |

## 230 THE SAN FRANCISCO COLONY

|   |     |   |
|---|-----|---|
| 10 cartridge boxes with ball .....  | 000 | 0 |
| 40 leather powder flasks with primer <sup>1</sup><br>at 4 reals each .....  | 020 | 0 |
| 8 iron frying pans at 2 pesos each .....  | 016 | 0 |
| 10 copper camp kettles, worth .....   | 075 | 0 |
| 12 large chocolate pots of the same<br>kind, worth .....  | 006 | 0 |
| 1 box of iron well dressed and pre-<br>pared, two-thirds for horse shoes<br>and one-third for mules, with a<br>double supply of nails ..... | 082 | 0 |
| 1 bag with tools for shoeing horses,<br>worth .....   | 010 | 0 |
| 2 blank books for keeping records, at 2<br>pesos each .....   | 004 | 0 |

550 4

### CATTLE AND PROVISIONS TO RATION THE PEOPLE

|   | Pesos | Reals |
|---|-------|-------|
| 100 beef cattle, one for each day at 8<br>pesos each .....                      | 800   | 0     |
| 30 loads of flour for tortillas at 8 pesos<br>each .....                        | 240   | 0     |
| 60 bushels of pinole at 18 reals each .....                                     | 135   | 0     |
| 60 bushels of beans at 5 pesos each .....                                       | 300   | 0     |
| 6 boxes of common chocolate .....   | 225   | 0     |
| 2 tierces of white sugar, weighing 16<br>arrobas, <sup>2</sup> at 2 pesos ..... | 012   | 0     |
| 12 pesos' worth of soap .....   | 012   | 0     |
| 3 barrels of brandy for needs that<br>arise, at 71 pesos .....                  | 213   | 0     |

1,957 0

<sup>1</sup> De suela para cevar.

<sup>2</sup> An arroba is a weight of twenty-five pounds, or a measure of about four gallons.

FOR THE TABLE OF THE COMMANDER AND THE CHAPLAIN,  
WHICH ECHEVESTE SUGGESTS TO THE MOST EXCEL-  
LENT SENOR VICEROY, CONTRARY TO THE  
WISHES OF THE PERSON INTERESTED

|   | Pesos | Reals   |
|---|-------|---------|
| 1 box of hams weighing 7 arrobas at 5 pesos each .....                            | 035   | 0       |
| 25 pounds of sausage at 1 peso .....  | 025   | 0       |
| 6 boxes of biscuit .....  | 096   | 0       |
| 1 box of fine chocolate, weighing 7 arrobas, at $3\frac{3}{4}$ reals.....         | 082   | 0       |
| 1 barrel of wine .....  | 065   | 0       |
| 6 arrobas of cheese at 2 pesos .....  | 012   | 0       |
| 4 pounds of pepper at $5\frac{1}{2}$ reals .....                                  | 002   | 6       |
| $\frac{1}{2}$ pound of saffron .....  | 003   | 0       |
| 4 ounces of cloves at 6 pesos per pound .....                                     | 001   | 4       |
| 4 ounces of cinnamon at 9 pesos per pound .....                                   | 002   | 2       |
| 1 jar of olive oil .....  | 004   | 2       |
| 1 jar of vinegar .....  | 005   | 0       |
|   |       | <hr/>   |
|   |       | 333 6   |
| For the carriage of all the articles, estimated at 500 arrobas, at 28 reals ..... | 1,750 | 0       |
| For guangoche mats, sacks, and ropes.....   | 078   | 6       |
| For 140 skin bags for provisions, at 4 reals .....                                | 070   | 0       |
|   |       | <hr/>   |
|   |       | 2,232 4 |

#### PACK TRAIN FOR TRANSPORTATION

|   |       |         |
|---|-------|---------|
| 4 droves, comprising 132 mules, at 25 pesos .....   | 3,300 | 0       |
| 100 complete pack saddles for the four droves, at $6\frac{1}{2}$ pesos .....  | 650   | 0       |
| 20 muleteers to be paid a monthly salary respectively of 8 to 14 pesos, allowed only for the $2\frac{1}{2}$ months of the journey ..... | 540   | 0       |
|   |       | <hr/>   |
|   |       | 4,490 0 |

## 232 THE SAN FRANCISCO COLONY

### PROVISIONS AND AID FOR THE NEW ESTABLISHMENTS

|   | Pesos | Reals         |
|---|-------|---------------|
| 200 head of cattle, bulls and cows, at<br>6 pesos ..... | 1,200 | 0             |
| 6 Indian vaqueros <sup>1</sup> at one real daily....    | 052   | 4             |
|   |       | <hr/> 1,252 4 |

### GIFTS FOR THE INDIANS

|   |     |                |
|---|-----|----------------|
| 6 boxes of beads, not including any<br>black beads but an abundance of red<br>ones, containing 600 skeins at 8½<br>reals each ..... | 637 | 4              |
| 1 cloak of blue cloth trimmed with gold   | 020 | 0              |
| 1 jacket and pair of breeches of buck-<br>skin .....  | 013 | 0              |
| 2 shirts at 4 pesos each .....  | 008 | 0              |
| 1 cap with its cockade, <sup>2</sup> like that of the<br>dragoons, at .....   | 005 | 0              |
| 2 bales of first class tobacco weighing<br>350 pounds .....   | 262 | 4              |
|   |     | <hr/> 946 0    |
|   |     | <hr/> 21,927 2 |

As appears in the margin, the estimate for the equipment of the thirty recruits and their families with clothing, arms, mounts, baggage, and other necessities for the second expedition of Captain Don Juan Baptista de Ansa from his presidio of

<sup>1</sup> Vaqueros are cowboys.

<sup>2</sup> Coat-of-arms, or some kind of a design for an ornament.



No 101

Razon por menor del Censo que podran tener los Vinculados de 30 Pácul  
tos, sus Mujeres, y los Niños adscritos sobre 180 Cuatreceros. 6. cada uno por m.  
sus Demos y Embros, el de los Amas, Monas, Pasiones, y Baqueros  
para el Servicio y transporte de otros en la Provincia de Otomuni al Pórtico  
de S. Carlos de Montezumá á saber:

Desahucio para un hombre,

|  |        |               |
|--|--------|---------------|
| 3. Camisas de Algodón buena.                     | á 187. | 00656.        |
| 3. Calzoncillos de Algodón de la India cada uno. | á 27.  | 00380.        |
| 2. Chupas de Pita, que en defuera, y ceria.      | valen. | 00713.        |
| 2. pares de Calzonas.                            | á 27.  | 00563.        |
| 2. pares de Calzonas.                            | á 27.  | 00054.        |
| 2. pares de Pantalones de General.               | á 107. | 00284.        |
| 2. pares de Tapetes Aborinados.                  | á 57.  | 00187.        |
| 1. Capa de Pita formada en Bayeta.               | en.    | 00180.        |
| 1. Sombrero.                                     |        | 00086.        |
| 2. Pares de Rulos Blancos.                       | á 27.  | 00024.        |
| Cena para el Sombrero, y Rlo.                    |        | 00026.        |
|  |        | <u>00628.</u> |

Yem para un Muger,

|  |        |               |
|--|--------|---------------|
| 3. Camisas.  | á 47.  | 01280.        |
| 3. pares de Vaqueros Blancos Blancos.                  | á 127. | 00684.        |
| 2. pares de Vaqueros: otros de Tanga: otros de Bayeta; |        |               |
| y otros de Pita, todo con costo.                       | de.    | 00680.        |
| 2. Varios de Pita para los Armadores.                  | á 57.  | 00382.        |
| 2. pares de Rulos de Pita.                             | á 127. | 00382.        |
| 2. pares de Calzonas.                                  | á 27.  | 00054.        |
| 2. pares de Tapetes.                                   | á 67.  | 00184.        |
| 2. Pares.  | á 127. | 00380.        |
| 1. Sombrero.   | en.    | 00086.        |
| 6. Varios de Pita.                                     | en.    | 00086.        |
|  |        | <u>00683.</u> |
|  |        | <u>00834.</u> |

FIRST PAGE OF ECHEVESTE'S ESTIMATE OF EXPENSES  
FOR ANZA'S COLONY

Utrecht, 7 Dec 1774

77

Unanue à glos Documentos, q<sup>to</sup> ultimo  
no es la cuenta q<sup>ta</sup> se resolve, la  
p<sup>ta</sup> expedicion de Capitan D<sup>no</sup> Juan Ombi  
ta & otra, la apension que muer  
del Rey fha d<sup>ta</sup> p<sup>ta</sup> p<sup>ta</sup>; & d<sup>ta</sup> con  
que d<sup>ta</sup> cuenta fha d<sup>ta</sup> & haver la  
comprido, las cuentas & el Comandante  
de Monta Rey D<sup>no</sup> Fernando & d<sup>ta</sup>  
q<sup>ta</sup> dice la falta & tropa p<sup>ta</sup>  
podea p<sup>ta</sup> nueva d<sup>ta</sup> &  
como quere a cuenta & d<sup>ta</sup> y d<sup>ta</sup>  
da p<sup>ta</sup> & cuando d<sup>ta</sup> el cor<sup>ta</sup> al  
tando de la t<sup>ta</sup>, p<sup>ta</sup> d<sup>ta</sup> y con  
las reflexiones que se fha e<sup>ta</sup>  
de d<sup>ta</sup> mas combeniente del  
Cuerpo & d<sup>ta</sup>. ~~d<sup>ta</sup>~~

San Ygnacio de Tubac to that of San Carlos de Monterrey amounts to 21,927 pesos and 2 reals, in which sum is included the estimated value of the articles which are now in the royal hacienda here and at Los Alamos, so that the total cost of the expedition may be seen at once.

Mexico, December 5, 1774.

JUAN JOSÉ DE ECHEVESTE (Rubric).

DECREE, MEXICO, DECEMBER 7, 1774<sup>1</sup>

Let there be added to these documents certified copies of the proceedings of the council in which the first expedition of Captain Don Juan Bautista de Anza was decided upon; the royal approval which was merited by this disposition; the diary with which this officer reported that he had accomplished the expedition; and the letters of the commander of Monte Rey, Don Fernando de Rivera, in which he reports the lack of troops necessary to make possible the establishment of new missions. And let a council of war and exchequer be called for Saturday, the 10th of the present month, at four o'clock in the afternoon, in order that in consequence of the discussion and of the reflections which I shall set forth, what is best for the service of his Majesty may be decided.

EL BAILLO BUCARELY (Rubric).

<sup>1</sup> Segunda Expedición á San Francisco por D.<sup>o</sup> Juan Bautista de Ansa. A. G. P. M. Provincias Internas, Tomo 134. Original.

LXI

BUCARELI TO SERRA

MEXICO, DECEMBER 15, 1774<sup>1</sup>

In view of what your Reverence has told me in your last letters, and of the practical advantages which the commander of those establishments, Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada, has set forth,<sup>2</sup> and considering that if the port of San Francisco is occupied it may serve as a base for future plans, I have decided that this shall be done, establishing in it a force of twenty-eight men, with their lieutenant and a sergeant, who, at the same time that they guard the country, may be a certain sign of the dominion of the king.

For this purpose Captain Don Juan Baptista de Anza will make a second expedition to Monterrey by land from Sonora, where he is to recruit the troops indicated, being careful that they shall take their wives and children, the better to pledge their permanence of residence, and taking the necessary supply of seeds, grains, and stock to completely fulfill his commission.

For my part, I have ordered that, with a year in mind, and remembering that the number of persons composing that colony will reach a hundred

<sup>1</sup> Santa Barbara Archives. Original.

<sup>2</sup> This statement is evidence of the influence of Serra's opinion in the matter, as in the decision to send Anza on his first expedition.

more or less, the packet boat destined to supply those establishments shall carry the provisions appropriate for their maintenance, which are to be arranged for by the commissary of San Blas, Don Francisco Hixosa, in consequence of my orders.

The country having been explored by Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, and the establishment having been founded, it is indispensable to erect the proposed missions in its neighborhood, both in order better to pledge its permanency as well as to propagate our holy faith among the heathen people who live there. And to this end I entreat and charge your Reverence that, in continuation of the fervent zeal which on all occasions you have manifested in rendering this form of service to God and to the king, you may dedicate yourself to carrying out this important work, choosing the friars whom your Reverence may judge suitable to fulfill this commission and ministry, being assured that Commander Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada will contribute with the necessary measures and aid in so far as he may be able, for thus I am ordering him under this same date, and that in so far as it may devolve on me I shall greatly aid with my measures for the purpose, because of the attention which those new settlers merit from me.

And likewise I promise myself that your Reverence, being so experienced in the establishment of missions, will observe the measures of economy which are necessary in the ministration of pro-

## 236 THE SAN FRANCISCO COLONY

visions, in order that there may be no shortage until their own harvests may permit some expansion; and above all, that your Reverence will communicate to me whatever advice you may consider opportune.

May God spare your Reverence many years.  
Mexico, December 15, 1774.

Duplicate.

Postscript written on the Principal:

The first object of this expedition is to conduct troops for the protection of the missions which it has been decided to establish at the port of San Francisco. Nothing is so important as this enterprise, with a view to future plans when, after what may be done by sea we may know the copious harvest in which the apostolic zeal of the missionaries may labor,<sup>1</sup> in order that the pious intentions of the king may be carried out, and in order that mutual aid may be given by those establishments, to which I shall give all the support which lies within possibility and which your Reverence, in accord with Commander Moncada, may indicate to me as necessary.

I know that the harvest of this year has been bounteous, and its increase is in charge of your Reverence, so that the abundance of provisions may facilitate the reduction of the heathen.

<sup>1</sup> Bucareli means that after the sea expeditions have been made, more will be known about the Indian tribes and possibilities for missionary work.

Between the two missions and not far from the coast the fort should be established for protection by the soldiers, and in order that they may give aid to one or the other when the six men of the guard which I am assigning to each one may not suffice.

EL BAILIO FREY DON ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA  
(Rubric).

To the Reverend Father Fray Junípero Serra.

## CRESPO TO BUCARELI

SANTA GERTRUDIS DEL ALTAR, DECEMBER 15, 1774<sup>1</sup>

Copy of the report made by the governor of Sonora to the viceroy, concerning the exploration from Monterrey to New Mexico.

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

In a letter of the 21st of last September your Excellency made known to me your plan for a new expedition by land to Monterrey with forces larger than those taken by Captain Don Juan Baptista de Anza, not for fear that Indians on the way may be hostile, but in order that on their arrival they may reinforce that presidio and make it possible without delay to proceed to the establishment of two missions which are projected for the River of San Francisco, supporting them with another small presidio. Your Excellency likewise tells me that to assure the success and happy outcome of the expedition you would like to have it take cattle, provisions, and some settlers suitable in numbers to the plan; and your Excellency deigned to order me to make careful inquiry into the desirability, usefulness, and outcome of the enterprise, and report to you what I might think of it.

<sup>1</sup> Copia del informe que hizo al Virrey el Gobernador de Sonora á cerca del descubrimiento de Monterrey para Nuevo Mexico. A. G. P.M. Historia, Tomo 25.



The fortunate circumstance of my having explored, just a few days before receiving this letter of your Excellency, the lands adjacent to the Gila by way of the junction of this river with the San Pedro,<sup>1</sup> together with that of having talked for some time with the Reverend Father Fray Francisco Garcés, not only has put me in a position to be able to reply with some knowledge, but, it seems to me, it imposes on me the obligation not only to fulfill the superior order of your Excellency, but likewise to add a statement of the advantages and utility as I see them, so that when the expedition shall have been decided upon it may be extended even to opening commerce between the provinces of Moqui and New Mexico on the one hand and this province and California on the other. And so I have decided to make this idea known to your Excellency, remembering also that plans for the erection of missions and presidios from here to Monterrey are much in mind. I hope that it may please your Excellency, and I now proceed to set it forth in the best way of which I am capable, together with the rest which your Excellency requires of me.

The most pious heart of our sovereign, caring only for the benefits of the propagation of the faith, will consider this a sufficient reason for considering without loss of time not only the two missions projected for the River of San Francisco, but likewise all those suggested by the docility of most of the tribes of the Colorado and Gila rivers, and those

<sup>1</sup> The San Pedro River flows northwest into the Gila.

which may be considered desirable for the safety of the road. And since these roads and places are fertile and well suited for crops and the raising of cattle, it is plain that in a short time the sterile Peninsula of California will have great assistance from these regions. Besides, since all the Indians from the Colorado River to the frontiers of the Apachería will be attracted, it will result not only in preventing these barbarians from associating with the Apaches, but with their aid and a small number of our soldiers we shall be able greatly to incommode them. To these considerations and the probability of facilitating passage to New Mexico and the reduction of Moqui, as I shall hereafter explain, is to be added the satisfaction which we ought to expect, in case it succeeds, from enlarging in this direction the dominions of our incomparable monarch. And thus for all these reasons it appears to me that the expedition which your Excellency has planned is necessary.

I judge that the Rio de San Francisco is [not] distant from the Colorado. Therefore the two missions and the small presidio which ought to support them should suffice to keep open and secure communication with this province. Besides, if it is necessary to add a presidio to cover all the transit, and that they may join hands with the others of the frontier, it will be well to suspend the building of it until the results of the expedition are seen, in order to avoid locating it at a place where it is not adapted to communication with its laterals.

The road opened by Captain Anza from the Colorado River to the Sierra de California has a sandy stretch without water for a number of leagues, which makes it impassable for a very large train, and because of the same scarcity of water the road from the Yumas to Caborca is also bad. Granting that this is the case, I consider it necessary for the expedition to go by way of the mission of San Xavier del Bac, the Gila Pimas, and the Opas or Cocomaricopas, to cross the Colorado River at the Xalchidunes, going from here directly to Monterey, and taking the measures which prudence may dictate to the commander.<sup>1</sup> This road once opened undoubtedly will be infinitely more advantageous than the other, both because of the better opportunities to frequent it as well as because it is more direct, and includes a number of tribes of good Indians, while on the other hand it does not offer any difficulty as far as the Xalchidunes.

In crossing the river and continuing the march there may be some trouble, but effecting the first with rafts, a canoe, or a bark which may be constructed, thereafter I do not think there will be any difficulty worth considering, for the chain of mountains which runs from the Colorado River to California naturally will afford adequate watering places, and Father Garcés has assured me that the Xalchidunes not only have commerce and friendship

<sup>1</sup> This would have taken the expedition directly across from the Gila Bend to the region of Ehrenberg. Crespo evidently had in mind a route directly from the Jalchedunes to Monterey, as Garcés and Anza had proposed earlier.

with the tribes intervening as far as the coast tribes of California, but also that they make this journey in four days. And finally, in case the difficulties should be insurmountable, there remains the easy course of going down to the Yumas or the junction of the rivers.

In the dry season the long passage from Tuquizon to the Pimas affords very little water, but by taking the road which I have just followed from the Cañada de Oro<sup>1</sup> and San Pedro River downstream, this difficulty is remedied by a great abundance of superior pasturage. However, if the occurrence is verified which I reported to the comandante inspector on the 25th of November last, which is the same as what is set forth in the adjoining copy, it would not merit the approval of your Excellency. This passage will be impossible without a large number of men, because of the Apaches. But by making war on these barbarians with the force and vigor which their pride demands, and establishing the three presidios of this frontier, as I propose in the letter cited, besides one on the Colorado River and another on the San Francisco River, or at some convenient place, I feel certain that we shall see our wishes fulfilled.

Since I have talked with the headmen of the Gila Pimas, I can do no less than say to your Excellency that both for the success of the plan which has been set forth as well as because of their good qualities, it will be very important to establish two missions

<sup>1</sup> At the north end of Santa Catalina Mountains.

for these Indians at once. They have assured me that they wish it, and previously they had manifested it without equivocation by the fact of having planted last year a cornfield for the friar whom they were already expecting. They frequently make war on the Apaches and have the goodness, as a sign of subordination, to advise the Reverend Father Garcés of the outcome, although it may be at the cost of going to the presidio of Tubac, as recently was done by the governor and other justices, who reported that they had killed twenty. And if a presidio should be placed in the neighborhood of the junction of the San Pedro and Gila rivers, its garrison will be able to count on whatever auxiliaries it may need from this tribe.

If the march of the expedition is made by the route which I have described, it is clear that it will be well to suspend all decisions until your Excellency may have the most exact reports, unless you think it well to entrust to the commander the establishment of some missions and presidios, for which, and to leave in those of California whatever your Excellency may think best, it will be well to take cattle and provisions. But as to the settlers, I seriously think that it would be better to effect the establishments before taking them, for in this way it will be possible to judge accurately the number that will be needed.

If the road to Monterrey is opened above the Yumas I also think, your Excellency, that friendship with these tribes is very necessary, and especially

with their captain, Salvador Palma. Indeed, for many reasons it will be useful to found a mission in that place. Day before yesterday a messenger from Palma arrived with the report that he would soon be here and that the murder was certain which doubtfully was reported to your Excellency by Captain Don Bernardo de Urrea in a letter of the 21st of last October, but with so unsatisfactory an explanation of the deed that we have not been able to ascertain how it happened, nor the person on whom the misfortune fell. The messenger says that Palma did not wish to tell him all he knew concerning the matter, but would do so on his arrival. I have arranged for this as soon as he sees me, not only with the purpose of learning as much as possible concerning the matter under consideration, but also to entertain him as he deserves and as your Excellency has ordered me.

And now, having set forth all that has occurred to me in satisfaction of the superior order of your Excellency I proceed to give the reasons which lead me to think feasible the journeys to Moqui and New Mexico.

In the district which lies between the Colorado River, the Apachería, and the provinces of New Mexico and Moqui, according to reports and to conjectures of the Reverend Father Garcés, there is found only the Abipay<sup>1</sup> tribe, which is known by various names. Three days' journey from the

<sup>1</sup> The Abipay were the Yavapai. This paragraph is based on Garcés's diary of his journey to the Jalchedunes (see Vol. II, 383).

Xalchidunes and two from the Opas are the Ibipays-guich, and on the right the Agaguechis, who are the Niforas, neighbors of the Apaches. At five days also from the Xalchidunes are the Ibipays-moch, a name which indicates that they may be Moquinos; and at seven days to the northeast are the Ibipays-geduoeh. By this last name the Xalchidunes call the officers and friars, wherefore, since they add that these Indians have oxen, it is likely that they may be the people of New Mexico. To the foregoing it is to be added that both among the Xalchidunes as well as among the rest of the neighboring tribes, mantas or fabrics of black wool are found, which, according to the general opinion, can only come from the province of Moqui, for in no other place, they say, are there stock of this kind and color.

And above all, more than by the foregoing I am convinced concerning New Mexico and Moqui by the report given me at Tuquizon<sup>1</sup> by a Gila Indian, which is as follows: This Pima says that, being captured by the Apaches three or four years ago, he was taken by a march of five days to a place where he saw a friar say Mass; that the Indians where he was went out to make war for a very short distance, for commonly within seven days they returned with their plunder; also that to their villages or to those near by others came for the same purpose with black woven shawls or garments; and finally that, having fled, and crossing two rivers, one large and the other small, after seven days of good road, traveling only

<sup>1</sup> Now called Tucson.

by night in order not to be seen, he arrived at his own country.

This story needs some verification, with which, it seems to me, we would be able to remove all doubt. This in substance is all I was able to learn, notwithstanding that I asked the questions which occurred to me in such a case to clear up the matter. It can not be any other place than the missions of New Mexico, the Indians with black garments must be the Moquinos, and the distance must be short.

With these well-founded conjectures, once your Excellency decides on the expedition I think it desirable that on the return from Monterrey these new explorations should be undertaken by way of the Colorado River, from which enterprise, even if the results which we hope for are not obtained, there will come at least a great deal of knowledge of those countries which might be useful in the future.

Notwithstanding that I fear that what I have here set forth with regard to the disposition of the body of the expedition will be superfluous, since my idea includes extending the enterprise by the journeys to Moqui and New Mexico, yet I am persuaded that I ought not refrain from making known to your Excellency that I consider very desirable a second chief, adorned with talent and prudence. For, in order not to risk everything it will be necessary to detach men for various reconnaissances, which if not made by an officer of good ability would perhaps be useless. There should also be an engineer, or



perhaps two, to survey the country, and to make the appropriate maps, and to do whatever else may arise pertaining to his profession; and a surgeon, because if the time is somewhat long, as is natural, he may be very much needed.

Among the friars who might go the Reverend Father Garcés will be useful. Indeed, besides having won the affection of the tribes who know him, he is very well informed as to the character of the Indians and he possesses information which may serve the commander. And it will also be very appropriate for the expedition to take along a few dragoons or mounted infantry, both for the security of the camp and for the bad places in the road, on which occasions they are very useful to the presidial troops.

If your Excellency decides on the expedition there is no doubt that it will be a worthy trust for whomsoever may be endowed with the appropriate talents. And although my realization of this fact prevents me from requesting your Excellency for the command of it, I hope that you will be pleased to know that I have manifested the most ardent desire to place at the feet of your Excellency such service as with this motive I am able to give, in case I am one of those included in the class approved by your Excellency.

This is all that has occurred to my humble talent regarding this important matter. And, if by good fortune I may have furnished the information which your Excellency wished, there will remain nothing

## 248 THE SAN FRANCISCO COLONY

more for me to desire. May God spare the important life of your Excellency the many years for which I hope. Royal presidio of Santa Gertrudis del Altar, December 15, 1774. Most excellent Sir,

FRANCISCO ANTONIO CRESPO.

To the Most Excellent Señor Frey Don Antonio  
María Bucareli y Ursua.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See the letter by Garcés and Díaz voicing opinions similar to those of Crespo, pp. 276-290.

## LXIII

### COUNCIL OF WAR AND ROYAL EXCHEQUER

MEXICO, DECEMBER 16, 1774<sup>1</sup>

Council of war and royal exchequer ordered called and held today by the Most Excellent Señor Baylio Frey Don Antonio María Bucareli y Ursua, Henestrosa, Laso de la Vega, Villasis y Córdova, Caballero de Gran Cruz and Comendador de la Bobeda de Toro in the Order of San Juan, gentleman of the Chamber of his Majesty with entry; lieutenant-general of his royal armies, viceroy, governor, and captain-general of this New Spain, president of its royal audiencia, superintendent general of the royal exchequer, president of the council of tobaccos, intendant of this branch, and subdelegated-general of the department of maritime mails in said realm, etc.

There were present the gentlemen Don Domingo Valcárcel y Formento, Knight of the Order of Santiago, member of the council of his Majesty in the royal and supreme council of the Indies, deacon of this royal audiencia, auditor general of war, and superintendent general of the royal quicksilver ships; Don Antonio Villa Urrutia, of the council of his Majesty and subdeacon of it, Don Joseph Antonio de Areche, likewise member of the council of his Majesty and the ranking fiscal of said royal audiencia; Don Juan Chrisóstomo de Barroeta, of

<sup>1</sup> Segunda Expedición á San Francisco por D.<sup>a</sup> Juan Bautista de Ansa. A. G. P. M. Provincias Internas, Tomo 134. Original.

the council of his Majesty in the department of exchequer, regent of the tribunal and royal audiencia of accounts of this New Spain; Don Ignacio Negreiros, knight of the Order of Santiago, and Don Santiago Abad, both chief accountants of the head table of that royal tribunal; Don Pedro Toral Valdés, accountant; Don Juan Antonio Gutiérrez de Herrera, factor, veedor, and proveedor; and Don Fernando Mesía, treasurer, both royal officials of the real hacienda and the chests of this court; Don Fernando Mangino, accountant-general ad interim of royal tributes; and Don Juan Antonio de Arce y Arroyo, proprietary accountant-general of the royal alcabalas.

An account was given of what was decided in the council held on the 9th of September of the year last past concerning the utility and the desirability of the exploration of the road by way of the Gila and Colorado rivers to the new establishments of San Diego and Monte Rey, in the terms proposed by Captain Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, and which his Majesty deigned to approve in his royal order of the 9th of March of the present year; and keeping in mind the start which in fact this captain made from his presidio of Tubac in the province of Sonora for Northern California, by way of these rivers, on the 8th of January, effecting the opening of the road with the soldiers which were furnished him and with the success and advantages which he sets forth in detail in his diary.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The documents mentioned are printed hereinbefore.

Report was also made of his communication of November 17th,<sup>1</sup> in which, in order that the occupation of the Rio de San Francisco which he is to go to accomplish may be effected, he set forth that for the forty soldiers who ought to accompany him on this expedition the people most appropriate are those of the *alcaldías* of Culiacán, Sinaloa, and Fuerte in the province of Sonora, to instruct whom in the first military rudiments he asked for five soldiers of the *presidios* of that province, in order that they may serve as sergeants and corporals; and that in order that they may be better equipped and be assisted with everything which they need, there should be sent to them the necessary articles of clothing, since if their pay is sent to them in cash it will only encourage their gambling and prodigality; that to make this journey it is necessary to take soldiers who have knowledge of the country and of the heathen, for which purpose he asks his Excellency to issue the appropriate orders permitting him to take from his *presidio* ten of those who accompanied him on the previous expedition, which number it will be possible to replace with five of these and five others of the *presidio* of Terrenate, to which, since they have a hundred soldiers, so small a number of recruits will not be harmful; and, setting forth the time most suitable for this journey, and the provisions which were sufficient for the other expedition, he explains how difficult it is to

<sup>1</sup> Anza's letter of November 17 is printed on pp. 209-213.

obtain useful saddle animals in the *alcaldías* of Culiacán, Sinaloa, and Fuerte, for they can be furnished only by strictly ordering the *alcaldes mayores*<sup>1</sup> that they shall require the *hacendados* to exhibit and sell the animals which they have reserved for the services of their haciendas, besides other things which this petition contains.

Account was also given of the superior decree of his Excellency, dated the 28th of November,<sup>2</sup> in which for the increase of the presidio of San Carlos de Monte Rey he declared necessary a lieutenant, a sergeant, and twenty-eight soldiers, so that without weakening its actual forces it will be possible to detach the men necessary for the two new missions projected in the neighborhood of the San Francisco River, where there is to be established a fort which shall be a sign that it is occupied, and a step and beginning for successive establishments, it being necessary to select the lieutenant and the sergeant from the soldiers of the presidios of Sonora and to take from them only the soldiers who voluntarily may wish to go to that domicile, the number not to exceed eight, the twenty others being recruited by the same Captain Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, and delivered by him to the commander Don Fernando Moncada, he assisting in the exploration of the river in order that he may report what he may have seen; and he taking for his return by the same road ten

<sup>1</sup> *Alcaldes mayores* were the head *alcaldes*, judicial and administrative officers of *alcalde* districts.

<sup>2</sup> For this document see pp. 214-215.

soldiers chosen from his presidio besides those which have been mentioned.

Likewise, report was made of the nominations for lieutenant and sergeant who, Don Juan Baptista de Ansa said in his opinion of the 5th of the present month,<sup>1</sup> must be furnished by the presidios of the province of Sonora, he proposing for the first office Don Joseph Joaquín Moraga and Don Cayetano Limón, both alféreces, the former of the presidio of Santa Rosa Corodeguachi, and the second of San Carlos de Buenavista; and for sergeant, Don Joseph Ignacio Espinosa, corporal of the first company of the presidio of Terrenate, Antonio Bravo, corporal of the presidio of Buenavista, and Pablo Grijalba, second corporal of the presidio of Terrenate. And he asks that he be permitted to select the ten soldiers which he needs.

Likewise, an account was given of the estimate of the cost of clothing for thirty recruits, men and women, and clothing adequate for one hundred and eighty children, arms, saddle animals, rations, and equipage for the service and transportation of everybody from the province of Hostimuri to the presidio of San Carlos de Monte Rey; cattle, provisions and transportation for these; mess for the commander and chaplain; provisions and aid for the new establishment; and presents of glass beads for the Indians, all of which amounts to twenty-one thousand, nine hundred and twenty-seven pesos and two reals, including in this amount the goods pos-

<sup>1</sup> This document is printed on pp. 220-224.

sessed by the royal exchequer in this city and in Los Alamos.<sup>1</sup>

And, keeping in mind what was decided in the council of the 8th of July of the year just past, and meditating upon everything with the deliberation appropriate to so important a subject, it was resolved in common accord that for the new expedition or journey which Captain Don Juan Baptista de Ansa is to make from his presidio of San Ignacio de Tubac to that of San Carlos de Monte Rey and the two new missions which are to be established, everything shall be done as he has proposed for the success of so laudable an enterprise. To effect this and for the soldiers which his Excellency estimated necessary to accompany him, there shall be issued by this most excellent gentleman the appropriate commissions of lieutenant and sergeant to one of the persons whom Captain Ansa has proposed for each office. To Ansa's choice shall be left the selection of the ten soldiers which he needs to accompany him, and the rest the same captain shall recruit as he may wish. And his Excellency, for this purpose and to check desertions which they may commit, shall issue to the respective justices the strictest orders to the effect that on their part they shall aid Captain Don Juan Baptista de Ansa in this and other matters which may come before them concerning the accomplishment of this enterprise, until by the same road which he explored he shall deliver the men to commander Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada.

<sup>1</sup> See Echeveste's estimate of expenses, pp. 225-233.



And he shall assist in the exploration of San Francisco River, in order to be able in consequence to inform his Excellency as to what he may see, and shall return with the ten soldiers of his company. And he shall be accompanied as on the first expedition by Father Garcés, who shall await him on the banks of the Colorado River until his return. And besides this father, he shall be accompanied also by Fray Pedro Fonte on the whole journey in order that, as an expert, he may observe the latitudes. And for this purpose there shall be sent to him by the hand of Captain Ansa the instruments which he may need, the appropriate dispatch being issued by way of charge and entreaty for this purpose by his Excellency to the reverend father guardian.

And, having seen the total of the expense which this expedition will cause, and of which an estimate was made in detail by Don Joseph de Echeveste and the same captain, this royal council reflected upon the matter at great length, and it was decided with regard to the costs that from the Pious Fund<sup>1</sup> destined for the propagation of the faith in the Peninsula of Californias there shall be taken ten thousand pesos of the funds existing in the chest provided for their custody. For this purpose the director shall put in charge of the royal officials of this Court ten thousand pesos for the expenses of the new expedition, delivering them to the factor Don Manuel Ramón de Goya; and they shall do the same with

<sup>1</sup> The Pious Fund was an endowment raised by the Jesuits for the missions of California.

## 256 THE SAN FRANCISCO COLONY

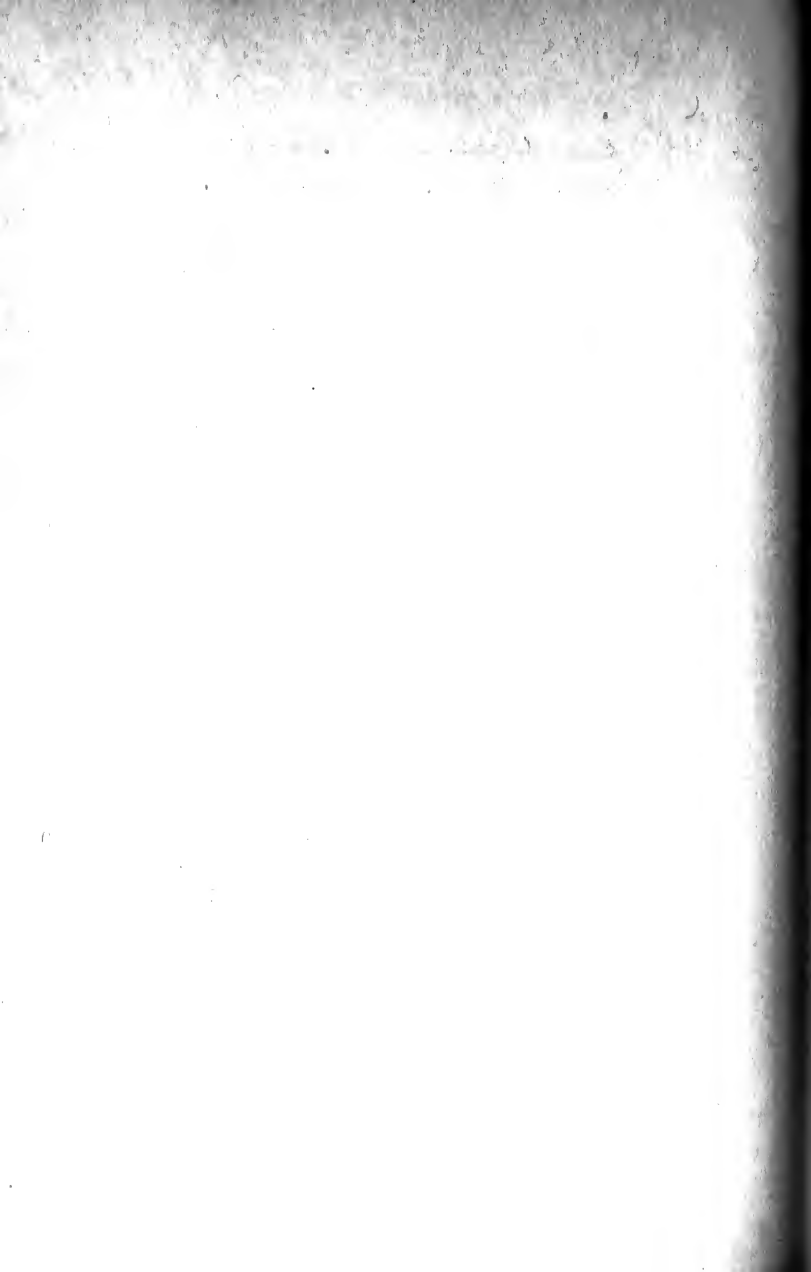
the rest which may be spent for this expedition, and whatever it may be it shall be on account of the royal exchequer; and they shall deliver two thousand dollars more of the same fund<sup>1</sup> to the síndico of the College of San Fernando, one thousand for each of the new missions which are to be established on the San Francisco River or in its vicinity.

It shall also be the duty of his Excellency to issue the appropriate dispatch to the reverend father guardian, in order that for them he may appoint ministers chosen from the fathers who are now in Monte Rey; and ten thousand pesos for expense money for the department of San Blas which, according to the royal council of July 8 of the year just past, they ought to advance for once only from the Pious Fund existing in the said chest and not yet paid. And to provide for the new positions of lieutenant, sergeant, and the other soldiers, the appropriation for the Californias shall be increased.

And finally, with a view to what was represented by Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, to the effect that he was not able personally to gather the provisions of the members of the expedition because he had to embarrass himself with recruiting the new troops in different places, for this purpose his Excellency shall name a person for this task, that is to say, Don Miguel Gregorio de Echarri, who is proposed

<sup>1</sup> That is, from the Pious Fund. The síndico was a business manager.





by this captain, and who it is said managed such affairs with credit in the garrison of Pitic during the military expedition of those provinces, or another person who may be of his choice, he to name the pay which is to be given him for his labor, and the person whom he is pleased to name shall keep an account of what he may spend, to present to the intendant or royal official of Los Alamos.<sup>1</sup>

And for everybody there shall be made certified copies of the costs and of the proceedings of this council, one for the commander Don Fernando Moncada; another for the factor Don Manuel Ramón de Goya; another for the tribunal and royal audiencia of accounts; another for the royal officials of this court; another of the same and of his representations of the 17th of last month and of the 5th of the present month for Captain Don Juan Baptista de Ansa; and this person, the factor Goya, and the commander Moncada, each one separately, and likewise the father ministers, shall keep formal and certified accounts of their respective expenses to send to his Excellency as soon as their distribution and destination shall be determined.

And finally, a copy in triplicate shall be made in order to give an account to his Majesty of everything newly done up to now, from the royal order of approval henceforward, because this has been done with respect to everything theretofore.

<sup>1</sup> By royal official (oficial real) is meant a fiscal official in charge of royal revenues.

## 258 THE SAN FRANCISCO COLONY

All of which was thus agreed to and signed by the gentlemen who composed the council. Mexico, December 16, 1774.

ANTONIO MARÍA BUCARELY (Rubric); VALCÁRCEL (Rubric); VILLA URRUTIA (Rubric); ARECHE (Rubric); BARROETA (Rubric); NEGREIROS (Rubric); ABAD (Rubric); VALDÉS (Rubric); GUTIÉRRES (Rubric); MEZÍA (Rubric); MANGINO (Rubric); ARCE (Rubric); JOSEPH DE GORRÁEZ (Rubric).

Mexico, December 23, 1774. Let everything decided in the present royal council be put into effect.

ANTONIO MARÍA BUCARELY (Rubric).

In a letter of the 27th of December an account was given to his Majesty. DÁVILA (Rubric).

On the 23d of the same month complete certified copies were made of the expediente in order to give an account to his Majesty. On the 5th of January the five private certified copies of the account of expenses and of this royal council were made as ordered. On January 18th a certified copy was made in duplicate and in triplicate for the same purpose.

Señores, his Excellency, Valcárcel, Villaurrutia, Areche, Barroeta, Negreiros, Abad, Toral Valdes, Gutierres, Mesía, Mangino, Arce, y Arroyo.

LXIV

BUCARELI TO ARRIAGA

DECEMBER 27, 1774<sup>1</sup>

No. 1640

The viceroy of New Spain sends a certified copy of the dispositions made in the council of war and royal exchequer for the expedition which Captain Don Juan Bautista de Ansa is to repeat by land from Sonora to Monterrey for the purpose of occupying the port of San Francisco, where missions are to be established.

MOST EXCELLENT AND DEAR SIR:

In a royal order of the 27th of September last your Excellency deigned to tell me that the king, when informed of the progress being made in the new missions of Monterrey and of my provisions made for the establishment of others, always preferring the two planned for the neighborhood of the port of San Francisco, his Majesty had deigned to approve all the measures taken in the matter in order that his royal and pious intentions and the expenses borne by the royal exchequer may not come to naught.

Recognizing the importance of this matter, as I informed your Excellency in my former letter, No. 1608,<sup>2</sup> I was convinced that Captain Don Juan Baup-

<sup>1</sup> A. G. P. M. Cor. Vir., I Sér., Bucareli, 1773-75. Tomo 11. The original is in A. G. I., 104-6-16.

<sup>2</sup> See Charles E. Chapman, *Catalogue of Materials in the Archivo General de Indias*, p. 365 (Berkeley, 1919).

tista de Ansa ought to make a second entry by way of the Colorado and Gila rivers, taking the soldiers necessary to guard the two missions of San Francisco mentioned, and to establish in that port a certain sign of defense to indicate that it belongs to his Majesty. This plan which, because it is important, I have thought it necessary to hasten in order to save time, is now on the point of being carried out, and I am engaged in giving all the orders concerning it which are provided for in the enclosed certified copy of the proceedings of the council of war and royal exchequer held for this purpose.

By it your Excellency will see that the soldiers whom Captain Ansa is to recruit in Sonora consist of thirty men, including a lieutenant and a sergeant whom he has nominated and I have appointed, in order that they may live with the appropriate discipline. Married soldiers and officers are to be sought with the idea that, having transported their women and children to the port of San Francisco, they may form there immediately a decent colony which, besides protecting the country, may serve as a base and beginning for successive establishments; and this purpose has led me to make the decision and to grant to these settlers the tools, clothing, and other things which Captain Don Juan Bautista de Ansa represented to me as necessary.

This captain will take with him, besides the troops mentioned, ten soldiers from his own presidio to accompany him on the expedition until he



delivers the others to Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada, commander of the new establishments. And after he has assisted in the exploration of the port of San Francisco he is to return with them over the same road to report to me in detail what he may have observed.

Ansa is to be accompanied also by Father Fray Francisco Garcés, already famous for his expeditions to the Colorado and Gila rivers, and for the part he has taken in the glorious exploration which that officer has just made, and by Father Fray Pedro de Fonte, both being friars of the Apostolic College of Santa Cruz de Querétaro.<sup>1</sup> The latter is to make the whole journey because of his intelligence in making observations and recording latitudes, while the former is to wait at the Colorado River until Ansa returns, as he did on the first journey. And in order that everything may be arranged and made possible, I have sent to the reverend father guardian of that College the appropriate dispatch by way of charge and entreaty.

Having decided at the same time to erect missions in the neighborhood of the port of San Francisco, I have left this enterprise to the decision of the father president, Fray Junípero Serra, and have ordered the commander, Don Fernando de Rivera, to contribute to it with all appropriate aid and dispositions. Both have been given to understand that

<sup>1</sup> A Franciscan missionary college, whose friars replaced the Jesuits in Sonora on the expulsion of the latter in 1767.

## 262 THE SAN FRANCISCO COLONY

in order that the soldiers may give succor to both missions in case the six men of the guard which I am assigning to each one do not suffice, the fort ought to be established between them and not far from the coast.

In consequence of what was decided in the council, twelve thousand pesos are to be contributed by the Pious Funds destined for the support of the department of San Blas, of which one thousand pesos have been assigned to each of the two missions for their foundation. But since the expenses of the expedition amount to nearly twenty-two thousand pesos, the rest are to be borne by the royal exchequer, as I have notified the royal officials of these chests, in order that it all may be paid.

I have decided that the friars for these new missions shall be taken from among the supernumeraries who are in the establishments of Monterrey, and I have thus instructed their president, the Reverend Father Fray Junípero Serra; and it has been decided to add to the annual allowance of the Californias the salaries of the thirty soldiers, including those of the lieutenant and the sergeant, who are to go from Sonora for their protection and for that of the port.

Of the whole cost of the expedition, until the indicated port is occupied, a separate account is to be kept with due form and detail. And in order that on my part no delay may be caused to an enterprise so commendable for the advantages which it

may afford for ulterior plans,<sup>1</sup> I am busy giving the rest of the orders which your Excellency will recognize as devolving on me, and am transmitting to your Excellency the result of everything, in order that it may enable you to report to the king, as I beg your Excellency to do, the dispositions which I here set forth and which appear from the enclosed certified copy, with the hope that they may merit the approval of his Majesty.

May our Lord spare your Excellency the many years which I desire. Mexico, December 27, 1774. Most excellent Sir, the hand of your Excellency is kissed, etc.

EL BAILIO FREY DON ANTONIO MARÍA BUCARELI  
Y URSUA.

To the Most Excellent Señor Frey Don Julián de Arriaga.

<sup>1</sup> He had in mind the exploration of the North Pacific.

LXV

BUCARELI TO SERRA

MEXICO, JANUARY 2, 1775<sup>1</sup>

In a letter of December 15 I said to your Reverence that in consequence of your representations it had already been decided to occupy the port of San Francisco and to erect missions in that district, for which purpose and the better to explore the country between Sonora and Monterrey it was decided to make a second expedition by land, to be formally conducted by Captain Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, who would take soldiers and other things necessary.<sup>2</sup>

I now repeat the same, and especially what is contained in my postscript, adding that according to what was decided in the council mentioned the Pious Fund destined to the support of the Department of San Blas is to contribute the sum of two thousand pesos, one thousand for each of the two missions, to be delivered by the royal officials of these chests to the syndic of the Apostolic College of San Fernando<sup>3</sup> of this capital, as I am reporting by charge and entreaty on this date to the reverend father guardian of the college. When you have made the distribution of this fund in the founding

<sup>1</sup> Santa Barbara Archives. Original.

<sup>2</sup> The letter referred to is printed hereinbefore, pp. 234-237.

<sup>3</sup> The Alta California missions were in charge of the College of San Fernando.

of those two missions, a formal account of it may be sent to me, as was decided by the council. Indeed, I entreat and charge<sup>1</sup> your Reverence to keep a very detailed account of all the expenses which arise, in order to send it to me on the proper occasion.

May God spare your Reverence many years.  
Mexico, January 2, 1775.

EL BAILIO FREY DON ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA  
(Rubric).

To the Reverend Father Fray Junípero Serra,  
Monterrey.

<sup>1</sup> *De ruego y encargo*, the technical term applied to a method frequently used by the viceroy in making requests of the clergy. It was more respectful in tone than an order.

LXVI

BUCARELI TO SERRA

MEXICO, JANUARY 2, 1775<sup>1</sup>

In a letter of the 19th of last June your Reverence expressed the pain which you felt at seeing Don Pedro Fages despoiled of the command of those establishments, and, stimulated by your fervent piety, you explained his deserts, assigning to him the merits which you have acquired by your own services, in order to attach greater worth to his.

This officer arrived here ill, but as soon as there is an opportunity he will recognize in my attention the favor which he has merited from you, an action as pious, honest, and religious as that which your Reverence manifests to me, desirous of contributing to the satisfaction of this interested party.<sup>2</sup>

May God spare your Reverence many years.  
Mexico, January 2, 1775.

EL BAILIO FREY DON ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA  
(Rubric).

To the Reverend Father Fray Junípero Serra.

<sup>1</sup> Santa Barbara Archives. Original.

<sup>2</sup> Serra in 1773 had secured the removal of Fages as commander at Monterey. Supported by Gálvez, Fages was promoted to a better post in Sonora, and later returned to California as governor, welcomed by the missionaries, after their experience with Rivera and Neve.

## LXVII

### BUCARELI TO SERRA

MEXICO, JANUARY 2, 1775<sup>1</sup>

It is arranged not only that the governor of that Peninsula is to deliver, in agreement with the Reverend Father Fray Vicente Mora, president of the old missions, the boxed-up goods which were detained at the mission of San Fernando de Velicatá, of which your Reverence makes mention in the letter of the 29th of May, but also that he is to cause to be taken the thirty new milch cows with sixteen calves which were purchased on account of the sínodos and delivered to Father Mora, on the condition that they were to be paid for at the mission nearest to San Diego, and, in addition, thirteen saddle animals, including mares and horses which had remained in the mission of San José, purchased from the goods of Don Gaspár Pisón, as I was told by the reverend father guardian of this apostolic college.<sup>2</sup>

It is also arranged to return to those new missions nine mules, four horses, and two mares, which

<sup>1</sup>Documentos Relativos á las Misiones de Californias. Cuarto Série, Tomo II. Museo Nacional, Mexico.

<sup>2</sup> When the Franciscans left the Peninsula in 1773 the Dominicans took charge, Father Mora becoming president. This letter deals with some of the details of settling questions of mission property.

the same father guardian said were given as alms by the two benefactors and applied to other purposes by the commissary, Don Antonio Joseph López de Toledo. And since all this is what your Reverence recommends in the letter mentioned, in order that measures may be taken to restore them, I am sending to your Reverence this information for your intelligence and satisfaction.

May God spare your Reverence many years.  
Mexico, January 2, 1775.

EL BAILIO FREY DON ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA.

To the Reverend Father Fray Junípero Serra, Monterrey.



LXVIII

BUCARELI TO GARCES

MEXICO, JANUARY 2, 1775<sup>1</sup>

To Father Fray Francisco Garcés, concerning the second expedition of Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, and the accompanying of Ansa by this father and Fr. Pedro Fonte, as is stated.

I have read with interest the diary which your Reverence sends me, together with a letter of the 17th of last August<sup>2</sup> in which you tell me of the places which you think most suitable for the establishment of missions, according to their advantages and the quality of the people who inhabit them. In every sentence of these documents shines forth the apostolic zeal which inspires your Reverence for the spiritual welfare of that heathendom and for the spread of the Gospel.

In view of everything, and moved by the hope offered by the docile Yuma tribe, to whom so much was owed by the former expedition, I am talking seriously of the establishment of missions, and am determined to profit by the opportunity offered by your glorious journeys among tribes hitherto un-

<sup>1</sup> 13 Documentos que comprehénden 2 Diarios y Varias Cartas del P.<sup>o</sup> Garcés con sus respectivas contestaciones. A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo. 52. Draft.

<sup>2</sup> This is Garcés's diary of his journey of 1774 to the Jalehedunes.

known, confident of having the pleasure of carrying out the idea in so far as proper arrangements may be made.

With this object and that of cementing the friendship of the tribes who live on the banks of the Gila and Colorado rivers, making communication with the new possessions of California more secure, occupying the port of San Francisco on that coast, and promoting the conquests in one direction and another, it has been decided that a second expedition by land is to be made from Sonora by Captain Don Juan Baptista de Ansa. It will be more elaborate than the first, for he is to take, besides ten soldiers from his presidio, twenty-eight others with their families, a lieutenant and sergeant, whom he is to recruit in Sonora, and is to take everything which has been considered desirable to promote the best outcome of the enterprise.

Being sure that your Reverence, in continuation of your apostolic desires, will gladly take a part in it, I have counted from the outset on your merit, and I have sent a dispatch, by command and entreaty, to the Rev. Father Guardian of Querétaro, your prelate, asking that he may permit it, giving to your Reverence the appropriate license, and another one of the same tenor to the Reverend Father Fray Pedro de Fonte, so that, as one versed in the observation of latitudes, he also may go with the expedition.

This father, for the reasons which I have stated, ought to accompany Don Juan Baptista de Ansa

throughout the whole journey and in the exploration of the port of San Francisco, taking the instruments appropriate for the observations which he is to make. But your Reverence will go only to the Colorado and Gila rivers, where you may await the return of Ansa, as you did the last time. To this I have no doubt you will agree, in order to do that which it appears to me may be of interest to the service. And since in this interim your Reverence may be free to examine the sites, treat with the neighboring tribes, and to ascertain the spirit and disposition of the natives toward the catechism and toward vassalage to our sovereign, I beg and charge your Reverence so to do, in the firm and sure belief that you cannot perform any service more acceptable than this, because of its great importance for subsequent measures.

God, etc. Mexico, January 2, 1775.

[BUCARELY]

To the Reverend Father Fray Francisco Garcés.

## LXIX

### JUNCOSA TO FONT

MEXICO, JANUARY 30, 1775<sup>1</sup>

For the benefit of Señor Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, who tells me that he is going to that province of Sonora with orders to go with your Reverence to our missions of Monterey and the port of San Francisco, I decided, in view of so good an opportunity, to write your Reverence this letter, giving you notice, etc.

I have understood that Captain Don Juan Bautista de Ansa has the plan and intention of setting out from those lands of Sonora for those others in the month of September, to come out at San Francisco without touching at the missions or at Monterey until he returns from the settlement which he is to make at San Francisco and from the exploration of those lands. This, if they attempt it in the way stated, from the experience and the reports which I have of those regions, I consider as more than an ordinary risk, and I fear that they may find themselves very badly disappointed. For, since the rains in those countries last from November or December until April, it will be necessary, in case they reach San Francisco before the rains or at their

<sup>1</sup> Extract inserted by Father Font in his diary of the second Anza Expedition. Juncosa had been missionary at San Luís Obispo and had returned to Mexico City for his health.

beginning, for them to spend the time until April suffering those rains in the open, without being able, however much afterward they may wish it, to go to Monterey, except perhaps a few of them and in light order of marching, and with great difficulty, because of the many quagmires of the country which make it impossible to travel, particularly for pack trains, as I have experienced; for even two or three going light have found themselves in no small difficulty to get through, especially if the rains are at all heavy. And in case they wish to be and remain at San Francisco, without going down to Monterey, on account of the rains they will be unable to do anything with regard to the founding, or very little at most. For they will not be able to make use of the animals for carrying the timber which may be necessary for the buildings, but will have to make use in such case of the people themselves to carry things on their backs, at the risk of good big mud holes, except for a few days which generally intervene between rains, when perhaps the people might accomplish something in the way described. But it is very doubtful whether they can use the animals because of the mires, as I have stated.

More than this, if they go straight from the Colorado River to San Francisco, they run another risk not at all inconsiderable. This is that without doubt they will come out at the last and innermost part of the estuary of San Francisco, where it is entered by the three rivers or branches which, united in one near the estuary (this is the confused notion

of the river which they imagined divided into three branches<sup>1</sup>), go to empty into it. Of these one runs from the east, and the others from the north or nearly so. Therefore it is possible and almost certain that they will strike the middle one, or between the rivers coming from the east and north. But these streams are not fordable, especially the one from the north, according to a report given by some deserters from Monterey who went and encountered it at a great distance, and more than forty leagues from the estuary into which they empty, where they were not able to ford it and the heathen were unwilling to cross them over on their rafts. For the other river, which comes from the east, a ford has been found only some forty or fifty leagues from its mouth. Therefore, as I have said, in case you gentlemen strike the middle one, you will have to go back at least the forty or fifty leagues in order to be able to ford them and emerge from that labyrinth.

On account of these risks it appears to me that the best thing to do would be to go from the Colorado to strike one of the missions, and if you wish to go to that of San Luís, which is in 35° 28', you will have a good road by taking a sort of a canyon or valley which runs nearly from east to west all the way from our mission of San Gabriel, or near there, to San Francisco. (By this road Captain Fages traveled once when he went from San Diego to San Luís, not wishing to touch at San Gabriel because

<sup>1</sup> The comments in parentheses are Father Font's.

at that time he was angry at Father Paterna; but we learned that it is a bad road and very rough.) It is distant from the missions some three or four days' travel toward the interior, and of it perhaps some notice was given to Señor Ansa by the soldiers who went with him from Monterey to the Colorado River when he returned to Sonora. In case you follow that valley and wish to come out at San Luís, before you reach the latitude named of 35° 28', the Indians will already have told you where that mission is, and perhaps you will find the traces of the animals from the various times the soldiers have crossed from the valley to San Luís when they have gone in search of some deserters who were among the immense tulares which are about on the parallel of San Luís.

By coming out at the missions, then, you have the advantage that in case of not being able to continue, through being caught in the rains either at any one of them or at Monterey, you will at least have shelter and better opportunity for being succored. And if after having explored San Francisco and effected the foundations and the rest which you may have to do, you wish to open or seek a direct route from the Colorado River to San Francisco, or vice versa, you can return from San Francisco directly to the Colorado River without touching at the missions.

[FRAY DOMINGO JUNCOSA.]

## GARCES AND DIAZ TO BUCARELI

URES, MARCH 21, 1775<sup>1</sup>

Opinion of Fathers Garcés and Díaz concerning the location of presidios on the Colorado River. Suspended until reports of O'Connor and Mendinueta are received.

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

The Reverend Father Fray Francisco Garcés, being at this mission of Los Ures<sup>2</sup> with the intention of going forward to that Court to report personally to your Excellency concerning the most important matter of new foundations in the district between this province and the River of San Francisco, received a letter from the reverend father guardian of my apostolic college, in which he tells him of everything decided in the council of war and royal exchequer and decreed by your Excellency in consequence of the new exploration, and of the reports of this father and Captain Don Juan Baptista de Ansa. Because he is suffering from some indisposition and can not by himself perform his task, he has begged me to set forth in his name the following reflections, for he considers them very pertinent

<sup>1</sup> Consulta de los PP. Garcés y Díaz sobre ubicacion de Presidios en el Rio Colorado. Suspendido hasta que vengan los Informes de Oconor y Mendin.<sup>ta</sup> A. G. P. M. Provincias Internas, Tomo 88. Original.

<sup>2</sup> Ures is in Sonora, eastward of Hermosillo and near the Sonora River.



to the successful outcome of the pious decisions of your Excellency.<sup>1</sup> And I have not refrained from adding my own opinion, because of the knowledge which I have of their very solid foundations.

In the first place, the reverend father guardian says that a new expedition by land from Sonora to Monte Rey has been decided upon, in order better to explore the road and the intervening country, secure this road, and occupy the port of San Francisco with the families which Don Juan Baptista de Ansa is to escort. Most excellent Sir, it seems to me very useful and even necessary to explore and seek a new road in order to secure this passage, for in truth the one which up to now has been discovered has so many difficulties to overcome, because of the extreme scarcity of water and pasturage and of the vast sand dunes which are found in various places, that I consider it very risky to make this new expedition by way of it. And, although at the cost of labor and great losses it may be possible to succeed in coming out to good country, this road can never be counted on in case of emergencies which may arise in the future, and which will not permit of choosing the best season, without risking the interests which are being conducted.

I do not fail to comprehend that it will also be very difficult on this occasion to leave this passage

<sup>1</sup> As a reason for not writing to the viceroy, Garcés had probably not only the excuse of his illness, but also his great dislike for writing, which he always escaped when he could. Since Díaz had been with Anza in 1774, he too had knowledge and opinions, and knew those of Garcés.

assured in every respect and the intervening country better explored. Indeed, for this purpose more supplies are necessary and a slower march than can be made by Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, embarrassed as he will be by the families which he is to escort. For this reason and for other circumstances which offer great difficulty, and will I believe deprive us of the desired end, I think that it will be the safest not to undertake anything more for the present than the transportation of these families and their establishment on the River of San Francisco, to secure this post in keeping with the Christian desires of your Excellency; and I think that it should be decided to dispatch another expedition on the express business of inspecting the country and assuring the road, not only to the River of San Francisco, but also to New Mexico, an enterprise which, according to the reports which we possess, it seems to me would be very easy. And from its accomplishment would result many advantages for this province and for those, greater ease in checking the incursions of the Apache tribe, noble service for both majesties, and much splendor and glory for your Excellency. And if you are pleased to so order it, I think that it would be very useful to entrust this enterprise to the governor of these provinces, Don Francisco Antonio Crespo, whose prudence, energy, and faithfulness assure me that he would successfully accomplish this and more arduous enterprises.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See Crespo's letter, p. 247.

Likewise, the reverend father guardian tells me that your Excellency has decided that Father Garcés shall accompany the expedition, and that, remaining on the Colorado River, he is to explore the places and tribes near by, sound out the attitude of those natives toward the catechism, and make sure that some missions may be founded on this river. Although, so far as we are informed, it has not appeared to be desirable to make any new foundation on the Gila River, I do know, most excellent Sir, that it would not be possible to intimate to this father any precept more agreeable to him, because of his great desire to coöperate for the greater glory of God and the welfare of those souls, of which I am an ocular witness.

But he begs me to explain to your Excellency concerning this matter that if he has to remain alone on the Colorado River it will not be possible to fulfill completely the charge with which he is entrusted, nor to advance very much what he has already done in his former journeys, in which he has not spared any effort to achieve this same end. But the lack of interpreters, the wars of those tribes with one another, and other circumstances have prevented him and he thinks they will prevent him now, from obtaining any more information regarding the suitable places and from winning the minds of those barbarians with salutary counsels.

Nor do we anticipate any difficulty (in view of what they have said and the proofs which they have

given of their goodness), in the founding of any number of missions which your Excellency might wish, not only on the Colorado River, but also, and even with much greater reason and fitness, on the Gila River. For the stronger desire of the Gila Pimas, the repeated requests which they have made that they be given missionaries, the aid which on many occasions they have given and are prompt to give our soldiers against the Apaches; their greater rationality and civilization, the fact that they are the ones who restrain and are able to restrain the Pápagos in case they attempt any uprisings, and the ones who are competent to assure communication with Monte Rey and with New Mexico much better than the Yumas; the better advantages offered by their lands for settlement because of the abundant harvests and the lesser scarcity of pasturage; and finally, many other circumstances which I do not mention in order not to further molest your Excellency, appear to make them deserving of the first place in the attention and charity of our sovereign.

Neither is there any ground, as others have imagined, for the fear that from such a plan these Indians would suffer greater hostility from the Apaches. Indeed, if this argument were to have any force it would be necessary to order withdrawn all the missionaries who live in these provinces, or to order the withdrawal of all the cattle and horses from their missions, in order that they might not serve as an incentive to the enemy. Besides, how much greater protection will those unhappy people

enjoy when defended by our arms than that which they have now with only their own slender forces! This is shown by experience, for it is seen that the pueblos which are reduced and under the protection of our nation do not suffer the grievous invasions which are endured by those who lack this protection. Indeed, frequently the Apaches come and destroy an entire pueblo, as had happened, according to what they told us, shortly before we passed through their country.

The only difficulty which might deter your Excellency from adopting this plan is the increased cost to the royal treasury which at first sight appears to be indispensable for the necessary increase of the troops to sustain the new foundations. I confess, most excellent Sir, that I ought not to express the slightest opinion concerning this matter, since it is so foreign to my calling, if I did not see that it is so entwined with what concerns our ministry, and that it is not possible to make a step toward one without touching on the other. Knowing this, I will now set forth the plan which I have been forced to conceive by my desire for the greater glory of God and the service of our Catholic monarch.

I assume that these provinces find themselves in their present deplorable condition because of the continual invasions of the Apaches. And these Indians are so advanced in the management of arms and in the conduct of war that I consider it necessary to increase the troops on their frontiers, at least for several months, in order that, repeating the

expeditions into their own country, it may be possible to punish them for their great boldness and inspire them with fear, if, indeed, their entire reduction or extermination is not effected. Experience teaches us that this is the best method to expatriate them and the correct way to punish them. This need is increased by the present circumstances, in which the presidios find themselves almost without saddle animals, because of the frequent assaults of these enemies, and for this reason unable to pursue them, and forced to protect the horse herds with strong detachments; and, moreover, many are occupied in moving their presidios in keeping with the New Regulation. For these reasons there are very few who can be spared to make these expeditions, and in consequence they are made with little profit.

But, knowing that your Excellency will take the necessary measures to meet this need, which we trust may not be permanent, and attending solely to the condition in which this frontier is to remain, in order that it may serve as a protection to the province and sustain all the missions which may be founded on the rivers Gila and Colorado, it appears to me, most excellent Sir, that in augmenting the troops beyond the number at present in the presidios, the foregoing objects may be kept in mind. I will now set forth my plan in the following form:

The troops maintained at present consist of three hundred and twenty men, six captains, and the corresponding subalterns, of whose distribution I assume that your Excellency is perfectly informed.

The duties of these troops consist in defending the province from the assaults of the Apaches and completing the reduction of the Seris and Pimas who years ago surrendered to the rule of our sovereign. They also have the special duties incident to the maintenance of the presidios, such as defending the horse herds, escorting the commissaries on their continuous journeys, and other similar tasks.

I have no doubt that by placing the presidios in the sites and districts ordered by the New Regulation all these forces are necessary; and from what experience teaches us, even these are not enough merely to beat down the pride of the Apaches and to free the province from their invasions. The causes of this inability are, first, the great distance which intervenes between the presidios and the lands of these enemies or the places they frequent. For this reason, when the soldiers make their incursions they have to travel several days in order to reach the lands of the enemy; and since they have to make such long journeys each soldier has to take two or three horses or run the risk of being put out of commission half way on the road. They also have to carry the necessary provisions, and since these must be sufficient to last many days, they must be carried on mules. Some of the soldiers have to be employed in the care of these mules and the saddle animals, and even those destined for action or assault cannot disregard those who go with the baggage. The Apaches, who always observe extreme caution, can see all this apparatus a long distance away, and

when they get sight of the soldiers they never stop to resist them, but immediately take flight with all their families. The soldiers, being so embarrassed, cannot follow them for any great distance, and so the campaign fails, and from these expeditions very little advantage results.

The second reason to which I advert is that the troops are so scattered because of the multiplicity of presidios. For this reason there is scarcely a soldier who does not find himself employed in the particular duties of his company. Each presidio has its quota of horses and mules which have to be protected by a strong detachment. It has also a commissary, who is almost continually traveling, accompanied by sufficient escort to transport the equipment of his company. The presidio itself has to have some soldiers for its defense. Among the men there are some who are weak and unfit for service during the time of their illness. And so the soldiers find themselves employed in these and other distractions and unable to attend to the principal object and purpose of their organization. It is for these and other similar causes, I think, that this soldiery finds itself incompetent to check the boldness of the enemies, who with great violence are dragging these most important provinces to the lowest degree of misery.

To prevent these great damages and to aid the new establishments, without increasing the forces, it is necessary to change the plan of the New Regula-



tion<sup>1</sup> for the location of the presidios. I already see the difficulty of the undertaking, but the advantages which it offers are likewise patent. I think, then, that it would be very advantageous to suppress at once the presidios of San Miguel and Buenavista, leaving in the latter a detachment of ten men for the purpose of restraining the Pimas of the pueblo of Suaqui; another of fifteen men in the pueblo of Pitiquí to check the disorders of the Ceris Indians and reduce them to the order of life which they ought to observe; another of fifteen men in the pueblo of El Altar to restrain the Piatos of Cavorca and to keep an eye on the western Papaguería for any contingency which might arise there. Each one of these detachments, commanded by a subaltern of good conduct, I regard as entirely sufficient to discharge its particular function, on the condition that they may not have a quota of riding animals to guard, for if in addition they are given this particular duty some more men than those assigned here would be necessary.

With regard to the cordon or line of presidios, I consider that of San Bernardino to be in a very good location, although it has some disadvantages, and it is the same site as that assigned by the New Regulation for the company of Fronteras. By assigning to it the quota of one hundred men it would be able to spare ten for Buenavista and ten others for the

<sup>1</sup> In 1766-67 the Marqués de Rubí inspected the frontier presidios all the way from Altar to Luisiana, and on the basis of his very thorough report and recommendation a New Regulation of presidios was drawn up.

pueblo of Pitiquí, and still have eighty with which to sustain the pueblos in its vicinity and to pursue the Apache tribe.

As to the presidio of Terrenate, which is ordered to be located at Las Nutrias, it seems to me it would be of great utility to move it to the advantageous post of Santa Cruz, which is distant from San Bernardino about thirty-five leagues to the west and over good country for communication, as I am informed; and by assigning it the same quota of one hundred men, it would be able to spare five for Pitiquí and five for El Altar, remaining with eighty for its principal duty with the Apaches.

The presidio of Tubac, ordered placed at Aribaca, could with great advantage be placed at the junction of the San Pedro River with the arroyo of Santa Theresa, which is distant from Santa Cruz about twenty leagues to the northwest, likewise over good country for communication; and by assigning it the quota of ninety men, with the corresponding officers, it would be able to protect the missions of the Gila River, giving them appropriate guards and attending to the chastisement and pursuit of the enemies.

The presidio of El Altar is ordered moved to the post of El Escomaqui, between the pueblos of Caborca and Bísanig, with a view to punishing the Apaches of the northwest. But the Apaches have never been known to live northwest of Caborca nor anywhere within a very long distance from there. So I think it would be very advantageous to place

this presidio with a quota of fifty men, or with sixty if your Excellency thinks it wise to add a few, on the Colorado River about thirty leagues to the northeast of its junction with the Gila, for the purpose of assisting the new missions which it is planned to establish on this river. Nor do I think a larger force is necessary in this place for the present, although later, when the heathen may lose that first respect for our soldiers, it may be desirable to increase the force somewhat.

This, most excellent Sir, is the distribution which I regard most desirable for the purposes which I have already explained. And I consider them quite attainable without adding any special expenses, but always with the understanding that at present it is necessary to meet the urgent need which we are experiencing by adding at least one hundred men, in order that, aided by those already existing, they may curb the pride of the Apache and drive him from the land, or at least fill him with fear if no more can be accomplished.

The advantages which I think may result from this arrangement are the following: First, the increase and extension of our Catholic faith among all those tribes, so deserving of this singular benefit for the reasons which I have indicated, and this without any special expense to the royal exchequer. Second, the greater ease with which it will be possible to punish the enemy through having the presidios nearer to their lands, enabling them in this way to make frequent expeditions, less embarrassed,

with greater promptitude, and with better results. Third, the number of saddle animals and the number of commissaries and presidios being fewer, not so many men will be employed in garrison duty and in providing the necessary escorts, and therefore many more will be able to devote themselves to the pursuit of the enemy. Fourth, the presidios being in the places proposed, all the missions and settlement of Spaniards will be within the cordon or line, which will not be the case if they are put where the New Regulation provides, for in this case the settlement of Tubac, the pueblos of Tumacácori, Calabazas, San Xavier, and Tuquison will remain without protection, as well as those which may be founded on the Gila and Colorado rivers. Fifth, if missions are founded on the Gila River under the shelter of these presidios, all of the Papaguería will be surrounded by Christian pueblos. By this means or disposition they will be nearer to catechism, and there will be less danger that they may attempt any uprisings, for they will lack the refuge of the rivers which up to now have served them as hope and asylum for their evil-doings. Finally, I consider this arrangement to be most useful as a means of protecting the road to Monterrey, which without doubt it is necessary to effect either by way of the Gila Pimas or by the proposed line of presidios. Likewise, a road to New Mexico will be promoted, and there will be a door by which to introduce Christianity into the wide field of all the intervening district.

In order that your Excellency may have a better idea of the plan which I propose I am sending the little map adjoining, and although it contains many minor errors, yet it does not have many which will prevent you from getting a substantially correct knowledge of the country and of the sites.

I am well aware that in consequence of my report there will be many who will tell your Excellency of the very grave difficulties which it raises, and who will make my proposal appear extravagant and harmful. They may say, in the first place, that what is ordered by the New Regulation is the plan drawn by the Most Excellent Señor Marqués de Rubí after he had very carefully inspected the country, accompanied by trained men, and that a gentleman of such qualities cannot err in his opinions. To this objection I respond, and without difficulty, that at the time when this most excellent gentleman inspected this country his opinion was sound, but he could not know at that time of the new exploration which subsequently has been made to Monterrey, nor of the pacification and reduction of the Ceris and Piatos, nor of the new foundations which are now being planned in the lands recently discovered, circumstances which affect substantially and would change the opinion of the Marqués himself if he were here.

In the second place, they may object that if the presidios, being distant from the Apachería, cannot defend their horse herds and free the country of such hostilities, they would even less be able to do so if they were located near the Apachería. But this

argument is so far from having any weight that, on the contrary, as I have indicated, this is one of the very reasons why it is impossible for the soldiers to punish the enemies. Moreover, the Apaches think nothing at all of traveling thirty or forty leagues or more to effect their thieveries, in case they do not leave in their rear any force which can resist them, and this is just the reason why nothing is gained in this region through their being farther away from their country.

Objectors may raise other difficulties, and I wish that I might know of them, in order to be able to refute them. I do not think that my opinion is so infallible that I might not commit very grave errors, but I assure you that they are due to the shortcomings of my talents, and not to a lack of good intentions.

I now close, desiring the greater glory of God, the exaltation of our holy Catholic faith, the best service and honor of our sovereign, and great exaltation and glory for your Excellency, whose most important life I beg God to spare for me many years. San Miguel de los Ures. March 21, 1775. The hand of your Excellency is kissed by your most faithful and humble servant and chaplain.

FRAY JUAN DÍAZ (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Lieutenant-general, Viceroy,  
and Governor of this New Spain, Don Antonio  
María Bucareli y Ursua.

LXXI

BUCARELI TO SERRA

MEXICO, MAY 24, 1775<sup>1</sup>

I have read the diary kept by the Reverend Father Fray Francisco Palou, relative to the last exploration made of the port of San Francisco and its environs in conformity with my orders, in which are described six sites suitable for missions, and I have seen likewise what your Reverence sets forth regarding this matter in a letter of the 8th of last January.<sup>2</sup>

All this I conceive to be dictated by the zeal for the service which animates the holy ideas of your Reverence, and I recognize the advantages which would result from the establishment of missions in the places which are indicated in it. But, although the first object of the intentions of the king and of my good desire is the propagation of the faith in those remote lands, it is necessary to harmonize measures, in order that they may better succeed; and although the first missions which ought to be founded are those of the port of San Francisco, in keeping with the decision of the council of royal exchequer, of which I advised your Reverence under date of the same January 2, in a letter under this

<sup>1</sup> Santa Barbara Archives. Duplicate original.

<sup>2</sup> For Palóu's account see this work, II, 395-456.

date I am ordering Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada that he must not defer the erection of the others in the places which your Reverence indicates. To you also I am now ordering the same by charge and entreaty, so that you may proceed according as your prudence may dictate, without prejudice to the two new missions of the port of San Francisco, and without prejudice to the necessary guard for the old ones, or to the force which ought to protect the presidios, principal and only support in any emergency.

Under this assumption, I hope that your Reverence will put yourself in accord with Commander Moncada, not doubting that in view of my orders he will contribute with his aid and measures to the establishment of missions, giving to your Reverence and to the rest of the fathers the consolation to which they aspire for their institute and their own zeal, until with better counsel we may consider and decide the other points which your Reverence sets forth in your letter as useful and necessary to the spread of the gospel in those new dominions, the results of which I will report to your Reverence opportunely.

May God spare your Reverence many years.  
Mexico, May 24, 1774.

EL BAILIO DON ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA  
(Rubric).

To the Reverend Father Fray Junípero Serra.



LXXII

BUCARELI TO ARRIAGA

MEXICO, MAY 27, 1775<sup>1</sup>

No. 1824

The viceroy of New Spain gives an account of what was written by fathers Fray Francisco Garcés and Fray Juan Díaz, missionaries of Sonora, concerning the need of changing the location of presidios of that province in order to assure the passage of the Gila and Colorado rivers. He says that he has requested an opinion of the comandante inspector, and promises to document the results of everything at an opportune time.

MOST EXCELLENT AND DEAR SIR:

Since the Reverend Father Fray Francisco Garcés has had so much experience with the lands, Indians, and tribes who live on the banks of the Gila and Colorado rivers, through the repeated journeys which he has made to them, and because he accompanied Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Baptista de Ansa on his first expedition, this friar was one of the first whom I chose for the new expedition which I have arranged to have this officer make with the plan of better exploring the country and securing the road to the new establishments of the north coast

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I., 104-6-16. Original. A copy is in A. G. P. M., Tomo 23. Instancia del Capitan de la Nación Yuma Salvador Palma.

of California, and of occupying the port of San Francisco, in order to establish in that place a sure sign that it belongs to the dominions of the king by the erection of a fort and two missions, where effort will be made to assemble the docile Indians who inhabit it.

With this purpose I sent to his superior the appropriate dispatch, manifesting how much I trusted in the apostolic zeal of this friar. He being notified of everything, but not being able to reply himself because he was ill at the mission of San Miguel de los Ures, this has been done in conference with him by the Reverend Father Juan Díaz, his companion.

In the letter which they have sent me<sup>1</sup> they make known the reasons of convenience which now exist for modifying the location of the presidios of the province of Sonora ordered in the new royal regulation in consequence of the opinion given by Lieutenant-general Marqués de Rubí.<sup>2</sup> They request the erection of missions on the banks of both rivers, in order to keep free the passage to the missions of Monterrey and even to New Mexico. They set forth the fertility and the advantages of those lands. They extend their reflections to the method of distributing the troops, with a certain increase which they say is necessary. They compare the difficulties and the expense with the advantages which would result. They give their opinion concerning those founda-

<sup>1</sup> The letter is printed hereinbefore, pp. 276-290.

<sup>2</sup> The reference is to the new Reglamento of 1772.

tions and their needs, concluding that the presidio of Fronteras ought to be located on the very site of San Bernardino which the regulation indicates, that of Terrenate in the advantageous post of Santa Cruz, that of Tubác at the junction of the Rio de San Pedro, and that of El Altar on the Rio Colorado, in order that the missions that may be founded may have protection. And of this distribution these friars sent me a detailed plan with a map.

Although I at once recognized that this project was well thought out, I have said nothing to these friars in reply, except that I have examined it in order to decide what is best. But now, since the comandante inspector of the interior presidios has told me he was going down to the province of Sonora for the purpose of inspecting those companies and planning for their removal to their new sites, I considered the occasion opportune, and ordered sent to him a copy of the map and of the project, requesting that, after making the necessary comparisons, and hearing the opinion of the governor, Don Francisco Crespo, and having in view what may be reported by the governor of New Mexico, Don Pedro Fermín de Mendinueta, from whom, by another order he had requested an opinion, he should send me his views, without regard to the new costs which might arise, understanding that although we were obliged to avoid unnecessary expense, yet, whenever the disease required a remedy I should not fail to consent to whatever might be necessary to obtain the result.

I assume the comandante inspector to be already in Sonora, according to his last reports; but since his opinion must precede my orders, at present I can only make known to your Excellency what has been proposed and decided up to now, in order that your Excellency may be pleased to transmit it to the king until the rest shall have been received. I am sending to the hand of your Excellency a copy or *testimonio*<sup>1</sup> of these documents and of my decision, to see if the latter merits the approval of his Majesty. May our Lord spare your Excellency many years. Mexico, May 27, 1775. Most Excellent Sir, the hand of your Excellency is kissed by your most humble and grateful servant.

EL BAILIO FREY DON ANTONIO MARÍA BUCARELY  
Y URZUA (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Julián de Arriaga.

<sup>1</sup> A certified copy of the file.

LXXIII

SERRA TO BUCARELI

SAN CARLOS DE MONTEREY, JULY 2, 1775<sup>1</sup>

HAIL JESUS, MARY, AND JOSEPH

MOST EXCELLENT AND DEAR SIR:

With the appreciation and consolation which I always feel, I received on the 28th of last June by the packet boat of his Majesty, *San Carlos*, your Excellency's most welcome letter, dated the 15th of December of last year, in which you were pleased to communicate to me your decision, which has filled me with joy, that the establishment in the port of our Father San Francisco shall be brought to pass promptly with a fort and two missions, and that for the purpose Don Juan Bautista de Ansa will come now with soldiers, women, children, and provisions, in addition to those which have been brought by the packet boat *San Carlos*, with the same destination. With that most estimable decision and your Excellency's measures, hope has been given to these afflicted friars, who have considered themselves idle, although in reality they have not been idle, and I have taken hope, whereas I was expecting to sympathize with all of them for their consolation.

<sup>1</sup> Transcript in the Bancroft Library.

Don Juan de Ayala, captain of the packet boat *San Carlos*, tells me that he has an order from your Excellency to go, as soon as he has finished unloading, to explore the port of San Francisco and all its vicinity and its inlets, and that in agreement with Captain Commander Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada some soldiers will go at the same time by land as an escort of the launch, the debarkation, etc. To this measure, which appears to me most excellent, I have added one providing that Fathers Palóu and Peña shall go with the troops, not only to acquire new knowledge of the country, to whose cultivation they are destined, and so that those poor people for whom are intended all these costly efforts, may begin to see themselves face to face with their fathers, and also and especially in order that the delay, which may last several months, with soldiers without a father among them, may not produce any effects like those at the mission of San Luís Obispo, which up to now they have not completely remedied.

These fathers are going completely equipped with saddle animals, provisions, and servants, all at the cost of this mission, without any charge against the royal warehouses. And I am anxiously awaiting the arrival of Don Juan Bautista de Ansa with his people, with the intention of accompanying them, if God our Lord grants it to me, to be an eyewitness of those new establishments and the erection of the sacred standard of the Cross and the banners of his Catholic Majesty in those hitherto uncivilized

regions, of whose achievement I expect to give your Excellency a detailed report and most affectionate congratulations.<sup>1</sup>

I remain with the hope which your Excellency gives me that when these establishments shall be effected, Commander Don Fernando Rivera y Moncada will contribute with the necessary measures and assistance in so far as may be within his power. But I have much greater hopes in what your Excellency adds to the effect that you will not fail to assist me greatly with your aid for the purpose, on account of the attention which these new settlers have merited from you. I would wish, most Excellent Sir, that we here might know that we merit from your Excellency even a small part of what we confess we owe. But if we do not pay there will be someone who will repay a hundred fold.

I see by the postscript of your Excellency, and I recognize, the great utility of the peopling and occupation of the port of San Francisco, as your Excellency has ordered with a view to future plans for conversions in a higher latitude, in proportion as the discoveries by sea which your Excellency with holy zeal has ordered repeated may demand, and I, now that my many years militate against my hopes of ascending so high, have much consolation in aiding to establish this stepping-stone by means of which those who are more robust may ascend to

<sup>1</sup> Being called to San Diego to settle troubles there, Father Serra was unable to assist personally in the founding of San Francisco.

## 300 THE SAN FRANCISCO COLONY

extend the glory of God, who will arrange it with all the felicity which He permits us to desire.

Most Excellent Sir, the hand of your Excellency is kissed by your most affectionate and humble servant, who greatly loves you.

FRAY JUNÍPERO SERRA.

Written to the viceroy, the 2d of July, 1775.



## ECHOES FROM THE TRAIL

### LXXIV

#### ANZA TO BUCARELI

LAGUNA DE SANTA OLALLA, DECEMBER 8, 1775<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

In fulfillment of your Excellency's orders I have tried to hasten as much as possible my arrival at this Colorado River, in order in the same way to push on to Northern California, but this has been made impossible by the events that have occurred as far back as the presidio of Tubac, of which I have reported to your Excellency, and from there to here. For, from the day when I left that place up to the present we have had many setbacks because many of the members of the expedition have fallen gravely ill. One of the reasons for this I think has been the change of temperature, since the colder it has become the greater has been the number of the sick. Aside from this, two women have given birth to children, two others have miscarried, and of the first two one has died. It is these events that have caused

<sup>1</sup> Ultimas Cartas del Then.<sup>te</sup> Cor.<sup>1</sup> Ansa, escritas desde el Rio Colorado. A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo 396. Original. Copies of this series of letters from Santa Olalla are in A. G. P. M., Provincias Internas, Tomo 169.

the greatest delay, because it has not been possible to mount the women on horses till after four or five days.

Amongst all these invalids, who regularly have been about a fourth of all those newly recruited, we have daily had two or three at the danger point, as is the case today, but divine providence has wished that up to now no one should die except the woman already mentioned.

May our Lord spare your Excellency many years. Laguna de Santa Olalla<sup>1</sup> on the Colorado River, December 8, 1775. Most Excellent Sir,

JUAN BAP.<sup>TA</sup> DE ANZA (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don Antonio María Bucareli y Urssua.

<sup>1</sup> Laguna de Santa Olalla (Olaya) was the name of Anza's camp about thirty-five miles down the Colorado River below Yuma. It was above the site of Pescadero Dam.

## ANZA TO BUCARELI

LAGUNA DE SANTA OLALLA, DECEMBER 8, 1775<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

Aside from the difficulties which we are experiencing amongst our people because of the sickness which has befallen them, I have not found at the junction of the Gila and Colorado rivers any other circumstances worthy of causing anxiety. On the contrary, I have encountered such docility and affection amongst the tribes who inhabit them that it is a matter for giving infinite thanks to the All Powerful for what they have taken the care to present us with. And this has always been, and I think will always be, a result of the example of Salvador Palma, captain of the Yumas.

To this person I delivered the present which your Excellency was pleased to send him in the name of his Majesty.<sup>2</sup> He has received it and has thanked me as well as the one from whom it comes. Before I notified him of my coming or sent him any other message, and two days before I reached his house, he came out to meet me. He had the politeness to ask me for the health of his Majesty and of your Excellency, welcoming me in as fine a manner as I

<sup>1</sup> Ultimas Cartas del Then.<sup>to</sup> Cor.<sup>1</sup> Ansa, escritas desde el Rio Colorado. A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo 396. Original.

<sup>2</sup> The present consisted of a suit of clothes and a cane of office.

had ever seen it done. Likewise he asked if we were now coming with father missionaries to establish ourselves at his house, since through the knightly governor of the provinces of Sonora, when he was at his residence, he had requested this charity of the king and of your Excellency. To this I replied, telling him the truth about where I was going for the present, but that he should have hopes that his good wishes would be granted within a short time. With this reply he was satisfied, but he requested that on this occasion I should report to your Excellency and reiterate his petition, with the assurance that he and all his tribe desire to submit entirely to our religion and our sovereign, adding that for this purpose he has notified all his people, and they are agreed to obey the precepts of the law and likewise those of his Majesty.

In the report concerning the circumstances of this Colorado River which I made to your Excellency in my previous diary, I have nothing to change in general, for the fertility of the bottom lands, because of the crops which they are now producing, is more noticeable to us than when we were here before. Only as to the number of its inhabitants do I wish to make any change, for they do not reach the numbers which were reported to me by themselves and by Father Garcés, on whom I relied. And now that they do not appear to us so numerous as when we first saw them, and now with further mingling with them we recognize their features and their faces and are able to

distinguish them all, I have come to conclude that they must be a third less than what has been reported hitherto, a fact which I have wished to make known to your Excellency for your greater intelligence and for the integrity of my reports. It is not surprising that they should suffer this error, when we were not able to distinguish which ones were the natives of this river and which ones had come to it from elsewhere. Indeed, with these visitors and even more who can be brought to the establishments which may be made here, the shortage which I note will be more than made good.

Concerning this same matter it seems well to say also to your Excellency, for the same purposes which I indicate, that the tribe of the Cocomaricopas, including the Opas, has been estimated in the reports which they and the Yumas have given us to be as numerous as these Yumas; but having observed them better during this journey than on the first, I find the same difference as that which I have noted with respect to the Yumas.

This tribe, together with the preceding tribes and the Halchedunes, Niforas, Cahuenches, and others, who were engaged in wars by which at the time of our first journey through these parts they were annihilating themselves, now maintain entire peace and quiet, since the time when in the name of the king I commanded that all hostilities should cease amongst them. I know they have carried out the order, and for its blessings all have given me repeated thanks.

The tribe in whose midst we now are<sup>1</sup> and to which they have come from the others, has reaped such a harvest from the benefit indicated and by means of the crops in which it abounds and which its fertile meadows produce for it, that whereas we were surprised the first time by their total nakedness, now on the contrary we are surprised to see them so well covered and so well supplied with clothing, of the kinds which are made on the Gila River and also those made in the province of Moqui.

May our Lord spare your Excellency many years.  
Laguna de Santa Olalla on the Colorado River, December 8, 1775. Most Excellent Sir,

JUAN BAP.<sup>TA</sup> DE ANZA (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don Antonio María Bucareli y Urssua.

<sup>1</sup> The Cajuenches.

LXXVI

ANZA TO BUCARELI

LAGUNA DE SANTA OLALLA, DECEMBER 8, 1775<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

Because of the difficulties which I have already reported to your Excellency, and which have delayed my march and prevented me from being, as I now ought to be, at the mission of San Gabriel or even further on, I am not able to inform your Excellency with certainty whether I shall go by way of that mission or take a road directly to Monterrei. For, if such contingencies as those above mentioned should arise, or there is lack of supplies, which were estimated for sixty days, although I shall make them last longer than that, it will be necessary, in order to equip myself with provisions and to leave the sick at a place whence they can be sure of reaching their destination, to go by way of that mission, as the place best provided to meet the situation.

May our Lord spare your Excellency many years. Laguna de Santa Olalla on the Colorado River, December 8, 1775. Most Excellent Sir,

JUAN BAP.<sup>TA</sup> DE ANZA (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don Antonio María Bucareli y Urssua.

<sup>1</sup> Ultimas Cartas del Then.<sup>to</sup> Cor.<sup>1</sup> Ansa, escritas desde el Rio Colorado. A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo 396. Original.

## ANZA TO BUCARELI

LAGUNA DE SANTA OLALLA, DECEMBER 8, 1775<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

In order to see if we could find a more direct route than the one which I took on my return from the last expedition, I sent a party of soldiers to seek it before I arrived at the junction of the Gila and Colorado rivers, in which place these explorers rejoined me, reporting that they had not found any other watering places or other advantages than those which we already know. For this reason I am making my way by the same places. And since it is not possible, because of the scarcity of water, for the whole expedition to continue united, as has been done up to here, because it would expose them all to the risk of perishing, there remains to me no other choice than to make the journey in three divisions marching a day apart, the first of which I shall dispatch tomorrow with the plan that all shall rejoin me at the place which we called San Gregorio.<sup>2</sup>

The march from here to the next camp<sup>3</sup> has always been the one causing me the greatest anxiety, but I have no doubt I shall accomplish it as I did

<sup>1</sup> Ultimas Cartas del Then.<sup>1</sup> Cor.<sup>1</sup> Ansa, escritas desde el Rio Colorado. A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo 396. Original.

<sup>2</sup> On San Felipe Creek in Borrego Valley.

<sup>3</sup> The next camp was El Carrizal, nearly twenty miles west-north-west.



cho, à passo de Regua: puer deste moda  
 es necessaria passon lar Peritar ca-  
 mi um comex dos dias; que ex lar cir-  
 cumstancias de llegar ya aqui en fla-  
 quesidad p<sup>ra</sup> la distancia q<sup>e</sup> ticnon ven-  
 nida desde n<sup>ra</sup> fronteira, e ler hace  
 mar venisble, y lo que volo se puede.  
 Repaxar, con hacer alguna manson

en este Parage.

N<sup>ro</sup> S<sup>o</sup> que á V<sup>ra</sup> m<sup>a</sup> Laguna  
 de S<sup>ta</sup> Olalla en el Rio Colorado, y Diziemb<sup>e</sup>

8<sup>a</sup> de 1775. . .

En m<sup>a</sup> de  
 Juan Bautista Anza



before, even though it may be at the cost of the loss of some saddle animals, as happened to us when we made it at pack train pace, for in this way it is necessary for the animals to go two days almost without eating. And the fact that they have arrived here now in lean condition, because of the distance which they have covered since leaving our frontiers, makes it all the harder on them, a condition which could only be overcome by stopping for a time in this place.

May our Lord spare your Excellency many years.  
Laguna de Santa Olalla on the Colorado River, December 8, 1775. Most Excellent Sir,

JUAN BAP.<sup>TA</sup> DE ANZA (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don Antonio María Bucareli y Urssua.

LXXVIII

ANZA TO BUCARELI

LAGUNA DE SANTA OLALLA, DECEMBER 8, 1775<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

Finding myself with all of our expedition at a place three leagues from one of the edifices which were built by the ancient Indians at the time when, according to what they say, some of them made their migration to go to establish their Mexican empire, I went to examine it personally, and of it I enclose to your Excellency an ichnographic description, with a note of its measurements according to which I have tried to proportion the enclosed drawing. But since in this matter I have no skill, I have thought it well to set down these measurements and such other information as may help to draw it with due accuracy.<sup>2</sup>

May our Lord spare your Excellency many years.  
Laguna de Santa Olalla, December 8, 1775. Most Excellent Sir,

JUAN BAP.<sup>TA</sup> DE ANZA (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don Anttonio María Bucareli y Urssua.

<sup>1</sup> Ultimas Cartas del Then.<sup>to</sup> Cor.<sup>1</sup> Ansa, escritas desde el Rio Colorado. A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo 396. Original.

<sup>2</sup> The description and drawing of the Casa Grande sent to Bucareli were appended by Anza to his diary, and are therefore omitted here. See Vol. III, 197-200.

LXXIX

ANZA TO BUCARELI

LAGUNA DE SANTA OLALLA, DECEMBER 8, 1775<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

In fulfillment of what your Excellency has ordered, to the effect that the Reverend Father Fray Francisco Garcés is to remain at this river for the purposes which the high comprehension of your Excellency considers advantageous for the spiritual welfare of its inhabitants, I have entrusted his care and that of the father companion who is with him to Palma, captain of the Yumas, who has told me that he will be responsible for their safety in his tribe, as he expects to do with all others of our people who may come to it.<sup>2</sup>

For the subsistence of these fathers I am leaving the goods which are noted in the accompanying memorandum, and with them are remaining three interpreters, and a servant of mine who is useful for all necessary tasks of the camp, besides three other persons who are servants and attachés of their reverences. Of all this it has appeared to me a part of my obligation to inform your Excellency.

<sup>1</sup> Ultimas Cartas del Then.<sup>10</sup> Cor.<sup>1</sup> Ansa, escritas desde el Rio Colorado. A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo 396. Original.

<sup>2</sup> The companion of Father Garcés was Father Eixarch. Anza left him at the Yuma junction to get acquainted with the Indians. The list of goods follows.

May our Lord spare your Excellency many years.  
Laguna de Santa Olalla on the Colorado River, December 8, 1775. Most Excellent Sir,

JUAN BAP.<sup>TA</sup> DE ANZA (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don Antonio María Bucareli y Urssua.

LXXX

SUPPLIES FOR THE FRIARS<sup>1</sup>

Memorandum of the goods which the undersigned lieutenant-colonel has delivered for the subsistence and maintenance of the Reverend Father Fray Francisco Garcés, and the other father who is with him. It is as follows:

2 boxes of glass beads; 1 tierce of tobacco; 1 pack load of ground flour containing thirteen almuds net, with 4 more of the same ground very fine; 1 pack load of beans containing twenty-four almuds; 1 pack load of pinole containing thirty-two almuds; 3 tierces of jerked beef, containing eighteen almuds net; 1 large box of biscuits containing four almuds; 1 box of chocolate for presents, and 1 box of sugar; 5 beeves on foot; 6 medium-sized cheeses; 12 wax candles; 12 cakes of soap; 3 hams; 1 bottle of wine; 1 bottle of brandy; 1 arroba of lard; 1 ax and 1 earthenware griddle (comal); 13 riding animals for the service of those fathers and the servants who are with them.

JUAN BAP.<sup>TA</sup> DE ANZA (Rubric).

Laguna de Santa Olalla on the Colorado River,  
December 8, 1775.

JUAN BAP.<sup>TA</sup> DE ANZA (Rubric).

<sup>1</sup> Ultimas Cartas del Then.<sup>to</sup> Cor.<sup>1</sup> Ansa, escritas desde el Rio Colorado. A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo 396. Original.

## GARCES TO BUCARELI

SAN PEDRO DE LOS YUMAS, JANUARY 12, 1776<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

In continuation of the reports which Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Baptista de Anza has communicated to your Excellency, it has occurred to me, on the occasion of sending for wine with which to say Mass,<sup>2</sup> to tell you how I have gone down along this river, passing through the Cajuenches, the Jallicuamais or Quiquimas, and Cucapás, as far as the shores of the sea, whose water I saw and tasted, besides witnessing the ebb and flow of the tide, as I shall tell your Excellency in my diary. The Indians of the sierra gave me reports of the fathers of both Californias, Alta and Baxa. The three tribes or divisions of people who live on this river, as far as the sea, have received me in a way that I had not anticipated, assisting me in every way they could. Although the Cucupás had been at war and at the time were very sad because of the great mortality inflicted upon them by the Yumas, Cajuenches, and Jallicuamais, now thank God the happy condition of peace has

<sup>1</sup> 13 Documentos que comprehénden 2 Diarios y varias Cartas del P.<sup>o</sup> Garcés con sus contestaciones. A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo 52. Original. Copy in A. G. P. M., Provincias Internas, Tomo 169.

<sup>2</sup> Father Eixarch tells in his diary of sending for the wine. Garcés left Anza at Santa Olaya and went down the river to visit the tribes.



been brought about, and on this very day, Palma tells me, some of the Indians who were formerly their enemies will arrive here.

All four tribes mentioned, and the Pimas and Cocomaricopas of the Gila, await with pleasure and great eagerness the coming of the fathers and Spaniards to their country, as they have told me many times. Their lands are well suited for the raising of all kinds of grain, and in most parts, especially on the Colorado, for the raising of cattle and horses; and although for the establishment of pueblos these lands of the Colorado do not offer the greatest convenience, on account of the great overflows of the river, yet there are not lacking some good-sized mesas on which to place them, although it will be necessary in some places to have the fields on the other side of the river.<sup>1</sup> I hope that God our Lord will grant me the same success with the tribes upstream, for which I plan to set out soon, God willing, whereby both Majesties will be served and your Excellency pleased.

May God spare your Excellency many years. At this place of San Pedro de los Yumas. January 12, 1776. Most Excellent Señor Viceroy, the hand of your Excellency is kissed by your humblest chaplain.

FRAY FRANCISCO GARCÉS (Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Don Antonio María Bucareli.

<sup>1</sup> The mesas were mainly on the east side of the river, close to which the river ran. Father Eixarch tells of Garcés's departure on his journey up the river. See his diary in this work, Volume III.

LXXXII

SERRA TO PANGUA

SAN CARLOS, APRIL 13, 1776<sup>1</sup>

HAIL JESUS, MARY, AND JOSEPH

VERY REVEREND FATHER GUARDIAN AND FATHER LECTOR,  
FRAY FRANCISCO PANGUA.

VENERATED FATHER AND DEAR SIR:

. . .

Don Juan Bautista de Anza arrived at San Gabriel on the 4th of January. There he found Don Fernando and offered his soldiers and his person, and in fact he went with him, to make a campaign against the Indians, arriving there<sup>2</sup> on the 11th of the same month. There he remained until the 9th of February urging haste in settling things, so that they might come to the question of San Francisco, in which, according to the orders of your Excellency, they were both to take part. But in all that time they made neither campaign nor any demonstration whatever, and so, seeing that he was not doing anything he came up. He left twelve families of soldiers at San Gabriel, ascending with eighteen other families of settlers, muleteers, etc., and arrived at the

<sup>1</sup> Transcript from the original. Bancroft Library.

<sup>2</sup> At San Diego.

presidio of Monte Rey on the 10th of March. Since Don Fernando had not left nor offered him the key of his room and no one there was able to give him a mouthful to eat nor a cup of chocolate to drink, nor a room to sleep in, he came here with the lieutenant, his scribe, Father Font, and a good many other people.

On the 22d of March they set out from here for San Francisco, and on the 8th of April they arrived here on their return. Soon after arriving here he wrote to Don Fernando that he would await him about twenty-five days, but having had no reply during that time he is now returning, and the people are remaining with little contentment, seeing that they are not going to their destination.

The number of persons who have been added exceed two hundred. If the bark is delayed and they make an attack on the supplies of the mission it will be too bad, especially for this one, which is fearful of misfortune in the harvest, for this year has been the shortest in rains of all we have experienced since we first came, and for this reason the wheat, which was the best that we had ever had in amount and quality, is drying up. We are praying for rain, and if it does not come we shall be very badly off, according to present appearances.

Don Juan Bautista appears discontented at the delay and the inactivity of Don Fernando, but who knows whether they understand each other or not. This gentleman is extremely well contented because

he has now fulfilled his part. As to the rest, I do not know whether he will aid him much as soon as he ceases to be responsible.

. . .

From this your Reverence's mission of San Carlos de Monte Rey, April 13, 1776. The hand of your Reverence is kissed by your most affectionate and humble subject.

FRAY JUNÍPERO SERRA (Rubric).

LXXXIII

GARCES TO BUCARELI

SAN XAVIER DEL BAC, SEPTEMBER 24, 1776<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SEÑOR VICEROY:

I have already informed your Excellency of the results of my journey to the mouth of the Colorado River,<sup>2</sup> and on this date I am informing my prelate of the events of the rest of my journey. The diary is not going now because I have not had time to arrange it, but I will send it as soon as possible, although it will go as something of my own and of little value, since I lost the magnetic needle and its loss made observations impossible.

I have found the Jalchedunes and Jamajabs more disposed to receive fathers and Spaniards in their countries than the nations below. With this good disposition, and the promises which your Excellency has made to me, I hope the project will be carried out, at least in part, even though not so extensively as your Excellency had planned, and for making this decision the arguments which I point out to my prelate will aid.

I hope that before your Excellency retires you will leave some monument erected to make patent

<sup>1</sup> A. G. P. M., Historia, Tomo 52. Del. No. 2705. Original.

<sup>2</sup> In a letter of January 12, printed on pp. 314-315. In a long undated letter to Father Ximénez, Garcés reported his wanderings.

to posterity the zeal with which you have labored for the greatest glory of both Majesties in the conversion of the heathen. I believe that in the hour of your death this achievement will be a greater consolation to you than many others which the world admires in the person of your Excellency. I wish I might have fulfilled the commission more perfectly, and, under the circumstances, if these establishments are not carried out I believe that only my unworthiness can be the cause.

May God preserve your Excellency for many years. San Xavier del Bac. September 24, 1776. Most Excellent Sir, the humblest chaplain and most devoted servant of your Excellency kisses your hands.

FRAY FRANCISCO GARCÉS (Rubric).

Most Excellent Señor Don Antonio María Bucareli y Ursua.

OFFICIAL REPORTS OF THE EXPEDITION  
AND PLANS FOR SAN FRANCISCO

LXXXIV

BUCARELI TO SERRA

MEXICO, JANUARY 20, 1776<sup>1</sup>

By your Reverence's letter of the 2d of last July I am informed of all the arrangements made for founding in the neighborhood of the port of San Francisco the two missions agreed upon in the junta de real hacienda, and that in order to be a witness of this new establishment your Reverence intended to go to that region when Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Baptista de Ansa should arrive with the families and troops which he was to conduct by land. All this I assume to have been fully accomplished by this time, according to the last advices of that officer, and I accept the opinion which your Reverence expresses of the four fathers named for the establishment of missions and the Catechism among the docile heathen inhabitants of those districts, not doubting that they will justify the confidence with which you made the selection.

<sup>1</sup> Original in the Santa Barbara Archives. Endorsed: "A (I). Señor Bucareli concerning the founding of two missions in the neighborhood of the port of San Francisco, January 20, 1776."

For my part I have ordered and arranged to have all the provisions possible for their subsistence sent in the packet boats *San Carlos*<sup>1</sup> and *El Príncipe*, which will sail from San Blas in the month of March next, destined to that port; and I trust in your Reverence's zeal that on your part you will contribute to the great progress which is hoped for, with the purpose of perpetuating the dominion of the king in so advantageous a place by means of a splendid colony, under whose shadows other establishments may be founded and promoted, together with the spiritual harvest of the heathen who inhabit those distant unknown lands, of whose results I await continued reports.

May God spare your Reverence many years.  
Mexico, January 20, 1776.

[POSTSCRIPT]

In order that we may be able to establish ourselves in the most remote regions now discovered, it is necessary that those missions shall be able to subsist by themselves with respect to provisions, and to this end I hope that the zeal of the father missionaries will be devoted to promoting crops and the raising of cattle. It is [impossible] to maintain more troops for escorts, notwithstanding it is important, not because I [object], but because of the

<sup>1</sup>The *San Carlos* arrived at Monterey on June 3, several days behind *El Príncipe*, which dropped anchor there on May 21 (Bolton, *Palóu's New California*, IV, 114-115).



difficulty of bringing from San Blas so many supplies and the contingencies offered by the voyage.

The port of La Thrinidad discovered by Don Bruno Eceta invites us to found an establishment there, and in order not to lose sight of this object, which might give so great a stimulus to the gospel, we ought to consolidate those establishments, and this is the end to which I hope the zeal of your Reverence will contribute.

EL BAILIO FREY DON ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA  
(Rubric).

LXXXV

BUCARELI TO SERRA

MEXICO, JANUARY 20, 1776<sup>1</sup>

In a letter of July 3 of last year your Reverence deals more at length with what has been done to effect the establishment of the two missions in the neighborhood of the port of San Francisco, sending a copy of the list of things needed for them, and covering the two thousand pesos assigned to them; and, doubtful whether the mission of San Francisco previously agreed upon was comprehended in them, your Reverence urges its actual foundation on this occasion.

This point, which is the most important one in the doubts of your Reverence, I at once reserved for the decision which might be made here in view of the country and its advantages. But since I consider it as already founded, in view of the repeated orders concerning the matter, I proceed now to answer the second question by saying that since the mission previously agreed upon with the name of San Francisco was definitely included in the two indicated missions, at present there is no necessity for sending the bell requested for it under a different assumption. And with respect to the rest which

<sup>1</sup> Original in the Santa Barbara Archives. Endorsed: "A (I). Viceroy Bucareli, January 20, 1776, concerning the founding of two missions near the port of San Francisco."

your Reverence sets forth as necessary, I will arrange that it be discussed in council, advising your Reverence in due time of what may be decided.

May God spare your Reverence many years.  
Mexico, January 20, 1776.

EL BAILIO FREY DON ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA.

To the Reverend Father Fray Junípero Serra.

LXXXVI

GALVEZ TO BUCARELI

EL PARDO, FEBRUARY 14, 1776<sup>1</sup>

In a letter of the 27th of October last your Excellency refers to the measures taken by the comandante inspector, Don Hugo O'conór;<sup>2</sup> to the results and the reports which he gave to your Excellency from the presidio of Janos concerning the location of the presidios being moved; to the advantages which would come from having six always remain in Sonora, transferring these to the Gila and Colorado rivers; and to the fact that, in the presidio of Monclova and Santa Rosa, most of the appropriation had been consumed although they were still half built, because they had wished to make them of stone up to this point, for which reason their respective commanders might report to this inspector, asking for money so that your Excellency might order it appropriated. And your Excellency replied to him that since they had departed from the rules prescribed in the Regulation, thus causing the setback, he should give them to understand, among other

<sup>1</sup> Instancia del Capitan de la Nacion Yuma Salvador Palma. A. G. P. M., Provincias Internas, Tomo 23. Certified copy.

<sup>2</sup> O'Conór was military inspector on the northern border. Gálvez had been visitador-general of New Spain, and had spent much time during the years 1767-1770 in reorganizing the Sonora-California frontier. He returned to Spain and became Minister of the Indies in place of Arriaga.

things, that the work must continue on their own account until concluded.

The king, in view of all this, has been pleased to approve all the measures of your Excellency with regard to these points, and by his royal order I am informing your Excellency for your intelligence and guidance.

May God spare your Excellency many years.  
El Pardo, February 14, 1776.

JOSEPH DE GÁLVEZ.

Joseph de Gálvez to the Señor Viceroy of New Spain.

This is a copy of the original, to which I testify.  
Mexico, the 12th of November, 1776.

MELCHOR DE PERAMÁS (Rubric).

LXXXVII

BUCARELI TO SERRA

MEXICO, MARCH 26, 1776<sup>1</sup>

I cannot express to your Reverence the sorrow caused me by the sad events at the mission of San Diego and the tragic death of the father minister, Fray Luís Jayme,<sup>2</sup> of which an account was sent me from that presidio by Commander Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada and Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, a disaster which perhaps would have been greater if it had not been for the opportune arrival at San Gabriel of this officer with the families destined to Monterrey.

The measures which these officers then took both for the security of San Diego and that of the missions of San Gabriel and San Luís were prudent, and likewise those which were to be taken with a view to future damages, and so I am informing Commander Moncada. This official tells me of the apprehension of some of the persons charged with the outrage, and he causes me to trust that with the chastisement of the worst offenders, of whom he had already captured one, he will again have everything peaceful. I hope that this may be so, but since this

<sup>1</sup> Original in the Archives of Santa Barbara.

<sup>2</sup> Also spelled Jaume.

attempt enables me to understand the slight trust which can be put in the catechized Indians, and less in the heathen when both unite to commit damages, I have ordered Don Felipe Neve, governor of the Peninsula, to recruit there if possible the twenty-five men whom Don Fernando de Rivera requests for the reinforcement of the troops in his charge, and that he send them at once and armed.

The arrival of the packet boats, *El Príncipe* and *San Carlos*, which have been sailing to those destinations since the 10th of this month, can do no less than contribute to the peace and tranquillity of the natives, at the same time that they aid in the occupation of the port of San Francisco. And since perhaps some individuals among them may wish to remain with places as soldiers, I have ordered also that they be enlisted, for the purpose of reinforcing the presidio of San Diego. And in order that their respective commanders may not prevent it, I am enclosing to Don Fernando Rivera a letter of authority, at sight of which both officials will lend themselves gladly to this service.

Moreover, the commissary of San Blas, Don Francisco Hijosa, is to make efforts to obtain other recruits in those districts, and if he succeeds they are to be sent to the said Governor Neve, equipped with arms and other things necessary, on the same launch which carries these dispatches, in order that by himself he may arrange for the aid which I am ordering him to give.

Nevertheless, I am not forgetful of other opportunities for assistance which may present themselves on occasion, and I promise to issue for the purpose any dispatches which may be appropriate. And with this understanding, I hope that your Reverence, leaving the misfortune to God, will in no way alter your apostolic zeal; on the contrary, I trust that on account of it I shall see the condition of those establishments improved, to which I have no doubt your Reverence will contribute, animating the rest of the fathers not to fear dangers, in view of the troops which are being added.

May God guard your Reverence many years.  
Mexico, March 26, 1776.

EL BAILLO FREY DON ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA  
(Rubric).

To the Reverend Father Fray Junípero Serra.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Strangely enough, this letter dated March 26 contains information regarding the San Diego uprising which Bucareli had not received when he wrote dispatch No. 2183 (see p. 331) dated March 27. However, dispatch No. 2186 (see p. 336), also dated March 27, contains the data lacking in No. 2183. This evidently comes from the custom of dating all the monthly dispatches for Spain on the same day, near the end of the month, although some of them were written earlier.



LXXXVIII

BUCARELI TO ARRIAGA

MEXICO, MARCH 27, 1776<sup>1</sup>

No. 2183.

The viceroy of New Spain reports the arrival of Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Anza at the Rio Colorado with the second expedition led to Monterrey, and the information regarding the disposition of those tribes received in this connection.

MOST EXCELLENT SIR.

My Dear Sir: Under date of the 8th of last December Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Anza tells me of his arrival at the Colorado and Gila rivers with the expedition which he is repeating by land to Monterrey, to escort the soldiers and families sent to occupy the port of San Francisco.

He gives as a reason for not having advanced further, the illness which the change of climate caused among the families, especially among the women, of whom only one, however, had died. He says that aside from this he has had no trouble in his journey. He reports the friendly disposition in which he found the tribes living on those rivers, and that the hospitality and the welcome were such as he expected. He says that Salvador Palma, captain of the Yumas, continues his good faith, requir-

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I., 104-6-17. Answered July 9, 1776.

ing it to be kept not only by his compatriots but by other Indians, his neighbors, taking pains to please them, and manifesting the greatest gratitude for the present which I ordered taken to him in the name of the king. In this connection he wished, like a civilized person, to be informed of the health of his Majesty and mine, responding with many polite phrases, giving assurances that he had repeatedly admonished his people to obey and be reduced to the fold of the church, and again asking for father missionaries to instruct them.

Lieutenant-colonel Anza reduces by almost a third his former estimate of the number of Indians whom he says he has seen thus far, confessing that he was deceived by the first reports. But he does not doubt that if an establishment is made there, those who will assemble from the surrounding country will make up the number which he gave at first, especially since the Halchedunes, Niforas, Cajuenches, and others who were at war, have been at peace ever since his former journey.

This officer says that in passing through the Pima tribe he examined one of the edifices which time preserves and which, it is thought, may be a palace built by the ancient Indians of this empire when they made their migrations, and as a curiosity he has sent me an ichnographic description of it, a copy of which I am sending to your Excellency. Anza says that although it is built of clay it has such a mixture of sand and pebbles that the best

mortar can not compare with it, to which he attributes its consistency and duration.

As welcome as these reports are those given by Father Fray Francisco Garcés, who again has accompanied Don Juan Bautista de Anza on the expedition as far as the Colorado and Gila rivers mentioned, where by my order he is to remain, visiting the tribes and winning them in order that with his reports we may proceed to the erection of missions to pledge their friendship and reduction.

In one of his letters Don Juan Bautista de Anza reports the supplies and men which for this purpose he left for Father Garcés, and that the Yuma captain, Salvador Palma, obligated himself to answer for their safety. But this apostolic friar, who, inspired for the service of God, never has been afraid of anything, tells me in a letter dated the 12th of last January how pleased he was to have descended the river, passing through and getting acquainted with the Cajuenches, Jallicuamais or Quiquimas, Cucapas and other Indians, from whom he has received warm hospitality. He tells me that he went as far as the beach of the sea, whose waters he saw and tasted; that by Indians of the sierra he was told of the fathers of both Californias, Upper and Lower; that the three tribes or divisions of people who live on the Colorado River near its mouth received him with friendship and contentment; that the Cucapas at the time were sad over the deaths suffered in the wars with the Yumas, Cajuenches,

and Jallicuamais, but that now all were at peace, to ratify which Captain Palma was going to send to them several Indians of these tribes; that all four of these tribes and the Pimas and Cocomaricopas of the Gila, were anxiously awaiting the arrival of fathers and Spaniards in their country, for whom they had repeated their requests to him; that in the main the lands were rich and fertile and offered advantages for crops; and that the banks of the Colorado River especially were suited for the raising of cattle and horses. Of these reports I have sent copies to the governor and the president of the missions of Californias, with an order to the effect that with them as a guide they may direct their progress through that region until they reach the Colorado River.

The presence of this father among these tribes, while Anza performs his mission to the port of San Francisco, I have considered most desirable, on account of the talents which adorn him, his zeal, and his acquaintance with the tribes, or most of them, and their progress. And the reports which Don Juan Bautista de Anza may give me on his return, with which I shall be able to proceed with sureness, are the only ones which I am lacking in order to decide on the erection of missions among those heathen and the establishment of presidios to protect them, without which shelter they will never be able to prosper.

With this idea, and with that of opening further communication with the provinces of Moqui and New Mexico, so many times recommended since

the year 1702, as is shown by many royal cédulas and orders sent to this government, I immediately thought well of the proposal made by the comandante inspector to remove to those places the presidios of San Miguel de Orcasitas and Buenavista, ordered extinguished by the Regulation, which happens to be almost the same thing which is jointly recommended by fathers Fray Francisco Garcés and Fray Juan Díaz, who give assurance that at the same time that these forces serve to sustain the new reduction they would serve likewise as a barrier against the Apaches, shutting them up in their own country.

Both points are of the greatest importance, and as such I am entirely dedicated to considering them. I have the preliminaries ready, but since the return of Anza to Sonora will determine the decision, I can only indicate my ideas for the present, in order that your Excellency may be pleased to transmit them to the king, together with the reports which I am copying here, hoping that everything may be approved by his Majesty.

May our Lord spare your Excellency many years. Mexico, March 27, 1776. Most Excellent Sir, the hand of your Excellency is kissed by your most humble and grateful servant.

EL BAILIO FREY DON ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA  
(Rubric).

To the most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don Julián de Arriaga.

LXXXIX

BUCARELI TO ARRIAGA

MEXICO, MARCH 27, 1776<sup>1</sup>

No. 2186

The viceroy of New Spain reports the arrival of the expedition of Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Ansa at San Gabriel, tells of the disaster at the mission of San Diego, and relates the measures taken to remedy the damage which may result.

MOST EXCELLENT SIR.

My Dear Sir: Letter No. 2183, in which I gave an account to your Excellency of the arrival of Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Ansa at the Colorado and Gila rivers with the expedition in his charge, was just posted when by way of Californias I received new advices from this officer, in which he reports that after forty-five days' march from his presidio of Tubac he arrived at the mission of San Gabriel, with no other mishap than the loss of some cattle and horses which died on the way.

These setbacks, although serious, he says, have been mitigated by the obedience and contentment with which the soldiers and families whom he is escorting to the port of San Francisco have made the journey. And his arrival at that mission of San Gabriel, which occurred on the 4th of last

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I. 104-6-17.

January, was so opportune that to me it appears miraculous, or like one of those accidents which providence disposes for our confusion; for, since on the 5th of the preceding November the heathen Indians of the neighboring villages, perhaps induced by some perfidious neophytes, as is being ascertained, attacked and reduced to ashes the mission of San Diego, the aid and succor of the forces which Ansa was conducting was like a visitation from Heaven.

The causes of this rebellious action may be of long standing, although nothing appears certain from the testimony, but the apparent reason is very frivolous and in keeping with the fickle character of the Indians. A few of the headmen being absent longer than usual from the mission, efforts were made to find them, and it appears that they, afraid of the customary light punishment of beating, joined several villages of heathen, who are always ready to oppose the propagation of the faith, because they are ignorant of it and do not know the blessing for which it prepares them.

At the very beginning, in the year 1769, while the exploration was being made by land and sea to seek the port of Monterrey, the heathen dared to attack the mission and presidio of San Diego, resolved not to leave a sign of the dominion of his Majesty. But the force which opposed them, though small, was sufficient to show them that they had made a mistake. The guard which up to now that establishment has had, for both presidio and mis-

sion, has been ten men, a sergeant and a lieutenant, with which since that uprising it has existed in peace. Probably the heathen's knowledge that this force was divided, because six were ill in the presidio, encouraged them to commit the evil deed, and it is known that the action was managed by some of the deserting neophytes, without whose aid they would have gained the victory only with difficulty.

On the 5th of November, then, at ten o'clock at night, a large number of heathen, more than six hundred according to the most conservative report, launched themselves silently upon the mission. They set fire to the slender houses, the church, and anything else they could. They took Father Fray Luis Jayme from his bed, dragged him to an arroyo, and cruelly murdered him, and would have done the same with his companion if they had caught him.

The few soldiers there, together with a blacksmith, a carpenter, and some neophytes, resisted with all their might, firing incessantly and with injury to the rebels. The father companion of the deceased gave them great aid in the battle, for at the same time that he encouraged them to make resistance he furnished them the powder and directed his prayers to the All Powerful that he might bless their efforts.

One of the proofs that amongst the Indian mob there were some or many rebels, is that all withdrew at daybreak, fleeing no doubt to avoid being recognized. Among the dead on our side are counted two



persons, and among those wounded by arrows and stones are all the soldiers. Although the rebels threatened to return to destroy everything, this did not take place, perhaps because of the damage which they received or because they learned of the preparations that were made immediately for resistance.

Commander Don Fernando Rivera, who at the time was at Monterrey, received prompt advice of everything, and with a view to preventing the disasters feared, set out on the road with all the forces possible, and on arriving at the mission of San Gabriel he learned of the proximity of Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Ansa with his expedition. This opportune meeting changed the face of things. The arrangements made jointly by these officers have been those which they ought to make with a view to the protection of the threatened mission of San Diego, and of those near by in case the Indians formed a similar plan directed against them. In each of them an adequate guard was established, and with the rest of the soldiers they went to the scene of the attack. Then, after taking measures suitable to its pacification, they began to arrest some of the confederates, with whom they will proceed to such a punishment as will frighten the rest.

The arrival of the packet boats *San Carlos* and *El Príncipe*, which have been sailing to those places since the 10th of the present month, as I say in letter No.<sup>1</sup> —, will doubtless contribute much to

<sup>1</sup> Blank in the original.

restraining the barbarians, for when they learn that from all sides forces are arriving, it will not be strange if they think them directed to their punishment, thus giving this accident weight in their deliberations.

On this good ground Don Fernando de Rivera asks for a reinforcement of twenty-five more men, but I, considering this difficult until next year on account of the departure of the boats, have been able to do nothing better than to order the governor of Californias, Don Felipe Neve, through whose hands I received these reports, to recruit in the Peninsula this number of men, or as many as possible, and send them to San Diego, completely armed and supplied, approving at the same time the aid of ten horses which he says he sent at once to assist in that reduction.

To Commander Moncada I have made it manifest that I am pleased with the zeal and care with which he was dedicating himself to bringing about the pacification of the natives, the tranquillity of the spirit of the soldiers and other Spanish individuals, and the punishment of the Indians, and that, desiring to coöperate in everything, I was ordering governor Don Felipe Neve to send the troops mentioned. I have told him also of the order sent to the commissary of San Blas to recruit some men in that vicinity for the same purpose, who, if recruited, ought to embark on the bilander *El Pilar*, which carries my reply, besides the equipment of

the twenty-five soldiers asked for. And for whatever it may be worth, I have also ordered the same Moncada that all the men on the packet boats *San Carlos* and *El Príncipe* who may wish to remain in those lands shall be given places as soldiers and assigned to the presidio of San Diego. With these arrangements and those which will have been made there by Lieutenant-colonel Ansa and Commander Rivera, I believe the damages received will be remedied in part. And although these are serious, I do not think that they should cause surprise, in view of our repeated experience with the inconstancy of the Indians.

Some of the rebels have attempted to inculcate also the Indians of the Colorado River in the outbreak mentioned, doubtless to cause greater fear, but this charge vanishes of itself in view of the distance, even though Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Ansa did not discredit it in his letters, very much to point, making various convincing reflections, among which I consider the most important the good reception and hospitality which he experienced in passing through the tribes which inhabit that river and the good faith which all have manifested, as your Excellency will see by another letter of this date, No. —.<sup>1</sup>

Finally, necessity makes it plain that if they are to maintain themselves in those remote places, a larger number of soldiers is necessary, and conse-

<sup>1</sup> Blank in the original.

quently greater expense to the royal treasury. I have dedicated all my care to this important matter because I know that it will coincide with the wishes of the king. And of everything I am reporting to your Excellency, in order that you may be pleased to inform his Majesty.

May our Lord spare your Excellency many years. Mexico, March 27, 1776. Most Excellent Sir, the hand of your Excellency is kissed by your most humble and grateful servant,

EL BAILIO FREY DON ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA  
(Rubric).

To the Most Excellent Señor Bailio Frey Don Julián de Arriaga.

## BUCARELI TO SERRA

MEXICO, APRIL 3, 1776<sup>1</sup>

Under date of the 26th of last March<sup>2</sup> (and before receiving your letter of the 15th of last December, which subsequently the reverend father Guardian of this apostolic college has delivered) I made known to your Reverence the sorrow which has been caused me by the sad and unfortunate happening at the mission of San Diego, and the measures which I dictated for the emergency, to provide all the remedy possible for the damages which might follow if that presidio and the missions were not reinforced with soldiers. And now, in view of your letter and of the prudent Christian reflections which your Reverence makes, inclining to the opinion that it is more appropriate to attempt to attract the rebellious neophytes than to punish them, I am replying to your Reverence that so I have disposed, ordering Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada on this same date to adopt this procedure, since it is the most suitable means for the pacification and tranquilizing of souls, and perhaps also for the reduction of the heathen inhabitants, who will observe that they experience friendship and good treatment when because of their excess they fully expect punishment and the desolation of their villages.

I am also informing that commander that the principal object at present is the reestablishment of

<sup>1</sup> Original in the Santa Barbara Archives.    <sup>2</sup> Printed on pp. 328-330.

the mission of San Diego and the refounding of San Juan Capistrano,<sup>1</sup> the former in the same place where it is situated and the latter in the one where it was already projected before the indicated event, with the understanding that the twenty-five men ordered recruited in Old California for the purpose of the better protection of those establishments ought to serve for the reinforcement of the presidio, and in order that, according to what seems best in the present situation, a sufficient guard may be established in the two cited missions of San Diego and San Juan Capistrano, until, when Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Baptista de Ansa shall have returned and I have received new advices, the most suitable arrangements may be made.

All this I make known to your Reverence for your satisfaction and consolation, hoping that, impelled by the apostolic zeal which animates you for the welfare of those reductions, your Reverence may help to make my measures effective, with the assurance that for my part I desire to give all the aid possible, in order that the progress which hitherto has been experienced in those distances, with such fruit and advantages, may not be one jot diminished.

May God spare your Reverence many years.  
Mexico, April 3, 1776.

EL BAILLO FREY DON ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA  
(Rubric).

<sup>1</sup> Just at the time of the rebellion at San Diego a beginning was being made at Mission San Juan Capistrano, but the uprising caused a suspension of the work.

XCI

BUCARELI TO GALVEZ

MEXICO, AUGUST 27, 1776<sup>1</sup>

No. 2428

The viceroy of New Spain reports the measures taken to aid with men and stock the new establishments of Californias, and encloses a note of those which he has ordered taken from the old missions.

MOST ILLUSTRIOUS AND DEAR SIR:

One of my principal cares has always been to afford the new establishments of the Californias all the assistance possible for their maintenance and perpetuity, and the stock with which it is necessary to provide them for this purpose. But since it costs the king so much to take them from Sonora where they purchase and have purchased them hitherto, and send them to those parts, I thought of aiding all concerned by repairing to some of the old missions of that Peninsula which are administered by the Dominican friars. And although from the annual statistics which are sent to me it might be possible here to determine the number of animals of all kinds which could be spared from the missions best provided, it seemed to me proper to learn the opinion of Governor Don Felipe Neve, being confident, as

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I., 104-6-18. Original. A copy is in A. G. P. M., Cor. Vir., II Sér., Bucareli, 1776. Tomo 65/82.

in fact it turned out, that it would come to me already approved by the father president of the missions.

With his letter of the 9th of May devoted to the subject, this Neve encloses a statement of the stock which is actually possessed by all the missions, and indicates that which without causing a shortage might be taken from the missions of San José Comondú, Guadalupe, San Ygnacio, and San Borxa, as your Highness will see from the note which I transmit, to which are to be added eleven brood mares, one stallion, three mare colts, and one burro belonging to the royal exchequer.

In view of everything I replied to Don Felipe Neve, since he was in accord with the father president, and I desirous that the value of the stock which may be given by the four missions named shall be returned to them at the price shown in the tariffs which your Highness established in that province, that I was waiting for him to inform me of it, and that he should make on his own account the most suitable arrangements to assemble at a stipulated place all the stock indicated, in order to effect their transportation.

When I gave this order I had already received that of his Majesty relative to the removal of Governor Neve to reside in Monterrey.<sup>1</sup> And since as soon as I learned of the unfortunate happening at the mission of San Diego I decided to increase that force with twenty or twenty-five men recruited in

<sup>1</sup> Neve's capital had been at Loreto.



Guadalajara and Tepic, and transported to the presidio of Loreto; and since it is probable that by this time this has already been done by the packet boat *La Concepción*, which sailed from San Blas with provisions for that destination on the 19th of July; it has seemed to me that, because all these ought to be transferred directly to San Diego, as a necessary point on the route to Monterrey through that region, it would not be possible to have a more favorable conjunction of circumstances for the conduct of the cattle. And in the last orders, in which I strictly command Felipe Neve to carry into effect promptly those of his Majesty, I inform him of it, encouraging him to arrange for his march with the recruits indicated, taking in the care of these and of some men experienced in the country the cattle with which those new establishments are to be aided, or even that some of them be taken ahead, leaving orders behind for the same purpose.

Without knowing of this measure Commander Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada has recently clamored to have some cattle sent to him, and if perchance through any unforeseen occurrence what I here treat of should already be done and the recruits should arrive ahead of Governor Don Felipe Neve, I have ordered that officer that these recruits should remain at San Diego to increase the force of that presidio, and that the other cattle should go on to Monterrey, in whose neighborhood they ought to remain, reinforcing themselves under due care

until the arrival of Neve, who is the one to make the distribution according to needs, always preferring the presidio and mission of San Francisco.

In this way I consider now that those establishments are attended to in this particular. The fertile country which they occupy is most suitable for the raising of stock, and if it should not prosper as I expect, it might repair once more to the old missions or to those nearest, which are the ones named in this letter and which have the largest number of this kind of stock, because of their better situation, without having to appeal to Sonora. All of this I hope that your Highness may be pleased to report to the king, trusting that it may meet the approval of his Majesty.

May our Lord spare your Highness many years.  
Mexico, August 27, 1776. The hand of your Illustrious Lordship is kissed by your most faithful servant,

EL BAILIO FREY DON ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA  
(Rubric).

To the Most Illustrious Señor Don José de Gálvez.

# XCII

## MEMORANDUM OF THE STOCK WHICH IS TO BE TAKEN FROM THE MISSIONS OF OLD CALIFORNIA FOR THE NEW ESTABLISHMENTS OF SAN DIEGO AND MONTERREY<sup>1</sup>

| <i>Kind</i>                      | <i>Number</i> |
|----------------------------------|---------------|
| Brood Mares .....                | 40            |
| Stallions .....                  | 3             |
| Unbranded Horses .....           | 17            |
| Mules .....                      | 16            |
| Jennies (4), and Jacks (2) ..... | 6             |
| Breeding Cows .....              | 60            |
| Bulls .....                      | 4             |
| Ewes .....                       | 60            |
| She Goats .....                  | 60            |
| Rams and He Goats .....          | 8             |
|                                  | <hr/> 274     |

### NOTE

Besides the stock listed there are to be sent also eleven brood mares, one stallion, three little colts, and one burro belonging to the real hacienda.

MELCHOR DE PERAMÁS (Rubric).

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I. 104-6-18. Transmitted with No. 2428. August 27, 1776.

XCIII

BUCARELI TO GALVEZ

MEXICO, AUGUST 27, 1776<sup>1</sup>

No. 2429

The viceroy of New Spain reports the return to Sonora of Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Ansa. He relates the occurrences and events in the new establishments of San Diego and Monterrey, the good disposition of the Indians of the Colorado River and of those regions, and reports the measures recently taken for the establishment of the presidio and missions of San Francisco.

MOST ILLUSTRIOUS AND DEAR SIR:

On the first day of last June Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Ansa arrived at the presidio of Orcasitas, having completed the duties of his commission. In all the letters which this officer has written me reporting his activities I have found verified the hopes which in letter Number 2186 I told you I entertained, to the effect that the unfortunate event at the mission of San Diego would not have serious results. I form the same opinion from letters written by the commander, Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada, received at the same time, and I have had the pleasure to know that the Indians

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I., 104-6-18. Original. A copy is in A. G. P. M., Cor. Vir., II Sér., Bucareli, 1776. Tomo 65/82.

who perpetrated it are so intimidated and frightened that they now wish nothing more than peace, especially in view of the imprisonment of the principal chiefs, whose punishment they fear will correspond with their deserts. However, I have ordered quite the contrary on the representation of the father missionaries themselves, because it is their opinion that since there is no remedy now for the damage done it is better to practice mildness and gentleness rather than severity, especially now that they recognize their error, and what in consequence may be feared by the villages of heathen living near to San Diego, all of whom it appears ask for peace, from which good fruits may be hoped for.

With respect to the results of the expedition of Lieutenant-colonel Ansa, I may anticipate with a summary until I am able to report to you with the diary of his operations. This officer has encountered no difficulty on his return, according to his reports, for the tribes living along the Colorado and Gila rivers welcomed him with the same love and hospitality as on going, especially the Yumas, whom he found this time dressed in good clothes, without doubt as a result of the commerce and friendship which they have established with the Pimas. Captain Salvador Palma, with three other Indians of that tribe, decided to accompany him to this capital with the sole object of becoming known to me and of knowing me. This decision and journey were made in accord with their people, by which is mani-

fested the good disposition and desire which all possess that missions may be established in their lands and that they may be illuminated with the light of the Gospel.

To this captain, to whom is due the success of the march of the two expeditions made by land to Monterrey, the attachment of the neighboring tribes to the Spaniards, and the observance amongst themselves of peace and quietude which they lacked before, Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Ansa entrusted Father Fray Francisco Garcés when he was journeying to the new establishments, in order that with his aid that apostolic friar might explore the land and the adjacent tribes, as I had ordered, and this has been accomplished, as your Highness will have seen from my letter number 2183.<sup>1</sup>

Subsequently to the reports given therein, it has been learned that this father, in fulfillment of his commission, went up alone as far as the mission of San Gabriel, dealing with the Indians in the intervening country, and returned to the Colorado River in order to come back by another route. The results of this journey I do not know at present,<sup>2</sup> but I do not lack the report that he left a paper with Captain Palma for Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, in which he told him that if on returning through there they did not meet, he should leave him the provisions and goods which seemed to him appropriate for his sub-

<sup>1</sup> Printed on pp. 331-335.

<sup>2</sup> On September 24 Garcés wrote the viceroy a brief account of his journey. Printed on pp. 319-320.

sistence. Ansa says that he did this, and I am expecting from one day to another a letter from this friar in which he shall tell me of his efforts and his successes, both in order to transmit them to his Majesty as well as to consider, in the light of them, the establishment of missions in those regions and the removal of the two extinguishable presidios of Orcasitas and Buenavista, preliminaries for which I have before me.

The commission of Don Juan Bautista de Ansa was directed principally to the establishment of the presidio projected for the port of San Francisco, with two missions in the neighborhood designed to attract the heathen Indians who live there, but the results have not corresponded to what I hoped for from such careful preparation. The first thing that happened was the uprising which took place at the mission of San Diego, with which Anza and his troops found themselves confronted on passing through that country. For since greater disasters were to be feared, this officer was forced to suspend his journey with the laudable object of assisting in the measures being taken against the aggressors and rebels. And all that it has been possible to achieve is the establishment of tranquillity, as has been said. But, since this incident demanded, in the opinion of the commander, Moncada, his personal presence in San Diego until the end was accomplished, this officer did not think it wise to abandon his purpose in order to accompany Lieutenant-colonel Ansa to the port of San Francisco.

Rivera having conferred his authority in the case upon Lieutenant Don José Joaquín de Moraga, with the assistance of this officer Ansa accomplished the reconnoissance and exploration of the country indicated. He gave an opinion in writing of the places where the missions and the presidio might be established, indicating for the latter the site known by the name of Castil Blanco,<sup>1</sup> from which place he declares it would be possible to prevent with cannon the entry of any vessel whatever into the port, adding that it offers good advantages for a settlement more than medium-sized, having near by firewood in abundance, not lacking in water, and the district being inhabited by heathen.

Having accomplished the task of selecting the site for the construction of the fort, Ansa explored the Rio de San Francisco. And he says that, following for more than twelve leagues the shore of the arm of the sea or estuary which runs to the south, there is found a fair-sized river which, if it does not dry up, as he thought might be the case, was very well adapted for a good settlement, since on one side and the other the water can be drawn out to irrigate the lands which abound on its banks, with much timber, firewood and a large heathen population. From this place he directed himself to the mouth of this river, whose depth he found to be thirteen varas, as he measured it with the oars of some Indian fishermen, and for this reason he reports the abundance of fish and especially of eels

<sup>1</sup> Fort Point.



two yards long, and salmon a yard and a half long, which constitute the food of those natives, who fish with rafts and other instruments dictated by nature. Farther on he found land more fertile but lacking in firewood, to which he attributes the raising of stags so large that they are more than eight spans high and have antlers more than two yards long.

All these reports I consider worthy of the notice of the king, and I would have had double the pleasure if they had been accompanied by the principal item, namely that a beginning had been made of the settlement of the land with the families taken from Sonora, and of the construction of the fort mentioned, as a sign that those lands belong to his Majesty. In this matter the proceedings were not what they ought to have been, as I have indicated with displeasure to Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Ansa and to the commander of those possessions, Don Fernando de Rivera y Moncada.

To correct this shortcoming, most opportune was the decision of the king to the effect that the governor of the Peninsula should go to reside in Monterrey. I immediately communicated to Lieutenant-colonel Don Felipe Neve the royal order concerning the matter, strictly requiring of him its most prompt fulfillment. And subsequently, in view of what was done by Ansa, I have repeated my orders to Neve, manifesting to him how urgent is his removal to that post, both to make the service more pleasing to his Majesty, and for the maintenance and pro-

motion of those new acquisitions. I have told him that at once upon his arrival he must put before everything else the establishment of the presidio and missions at San Francisco, proposing to me in the future whatever he may think best, in agreement with the father president of the missions, Fray Junípero Serra, who knows those regions and always wishes what is best, because of the fervor and apostolic zeal which animates him.

I thought it wise to send to that governor in brief resumé a report of the difficulties between Don Fernando Rivera and Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, which have contributed much to the failure of my measures, telling him how displeased I am by the dissensions which arose, and that I was appeased solely by the consideration that his presence would afford a remedy for everything, making my measures effective by their fulfillment, and I trust in the zeal and love which this officer has always manifested for the service that everything will be done exactly, without any other such misfortunes as the setback that has been suffered in a matter of such importance. And I hope that your Lordship will be pleased to make this known to the king, with all the rest of which I am giving an account, telling to his Majesty that nothing ought to cause him care, and that the anxiety which it causes me is solely due to my desire to be able to ascertain by new explorations the possibility of conducting supplies to those establishments, which I consider of first importance.

May God spare your Lordship many years. Mexico, August 27, 1776. Most Excellent Sir, the hand of your Excellency is kissed by your most faithful servant,

EL BAILIO FREY DON ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA  
(Rubric).

To the Most Illustrious Señor Don Joseph de Gálvez.

XCIV

BUCARELI TO SERRA

MEXICO, DECEMBER 25, 1776<sup>1</sup>

I have no doubt that the delay in the reestablishment of the ruined mission of San Diego will have caused your Reverence the pain which you indicate in your letter of October 8, for I too have been caused displeasure at merely knowing of it, and how much more at the frivolous motives which contributed, of which I have been informed by the letters of the naval-lieutenant Don Diego Choquet, commander of the packet boat *El Príncipe*.

I suppose that with the arrival of the twenty-five men whom I ordered recruited for the reinforcement of the troops of that presidio, Don Fernando de Rivera will dedicate himself to carrying out this important matter, and to erecting at the proper time the mission of San Juan Capistrano in the place formerly chosen. But in case this may not have been done, your Reverence must not doubt that the governor of those provinces, charged by his Majesty to reside in that presidio of Monterrey, will do all this, if he has not already done it, very much to the satisfaction of your Reverence, on account of the zeal for the service which animates him and of the other qualities which adorn him.

<sup>1</sup> Original in the Santa Barbara Archives. Endorsed: "A (1). Señor Bucareli concerning the founding of San Francisco, December 25, 1776."

The last reports which this officer has given me, under date of November 3, ult., are to the effect that he was arranging for his march to that place. And being persuaded that when you receive this letter he will already be there, I am instructing and advising him as to what he ought to do for the promotion of those acquisitions, charging him urgently that in case the reëstablishment of the mission of San Diego and the founding of that of San Juan Capistrano has not already been effected, he must devote himself immediately to carrying it out. And I am giving him the same orders that I formerly gave to Don Fernando Rivera, to the effect that the petty chiefs or authors of the past uprising shall not be punished, so that the charity with which they are treated, when they merit the extreme penalty, may warn and enlighten them, to the end that they may live docile and quiet.

One of the things which I am also strictly charging is the erection of the mission of Santa Clara in the neighborhood of the presidio of San Francisco, with this advocacy. And although I am giving orders to the effect that these missions may be followed by the two which your Reverence requests as necessary on the Channel of Santa Barbara, and another in the district which lies between that establishment and the other, in order to secure communication, yet it will be best to suspend this until later, when the others are fully established. With this understanding, your Reverence may tell me with the re-

turn of the vessels what utensils will be necessary for them, in order that plans may be made for sending them, meanwhile giving preference to the erection of the rest, although very soon, I am confident, those of the Channel of Santa Barbara already meditated may be founded for the purpose of reducing the great heathendom which inhabits that country, in order to assure the passage of the escorts which are dispatched with the mail, and to insure its circulation, as I am ordering the governor, Don Felipe Neve, for with this arrangement it may be easy to establish it monthly with this government, either by way of San Blas or by Sonora.

The soldiers who are at present in those establishments I consider sufficient to provide for the protection of all of them, and I am ordering the governor that those of San Francisco shall have no other duty than the care of the fort and the guard of the two collateral missions; but that the seventy-five men who are in San Diego and Monterrey ought to be distributed proportionately in the two presidios and in the missions, putting at least six in each one of the new missions, carrying it out in conference with your Reverence.

I am likewise instructing the governor that it will be well to devote his attention to the promotion of those acquisitions by means of settlement, crops, orchards, the raising of cattle, and whatever else may be considered suitable for accomplishing the purpose. And I am not forgetting to instruct him in

the method of rationing the colonists in proportion to their families, assigning them lands, cattle, and tools, in order that they may become useful, being assured that if they are useful to themselves they will be useful to the state, with advantage and saving.

This just maxim has caused me to decide to aid and succor liberally all those establishments. And in fact the frigate *Santiago*, which conducts those supplies for San Francisco, provisions for that one, and the effects which remain at San Blas from the previous shipments, is to be followed immediately by the packet boat *El Príncipe* with the rest of the supplies of that presidio, those belonging to San Diego, and the consignments of one and the other which are being assembled, so that if the two vessels should not be able to fulfill my orders for lack of room, and there should be an excess of cargo, it shall be dispatched in the one named *San Carlos*, because it is my plan that next year there may be no suffering for lack of anything in those remote places, in order that, the needs being less in the following year of 1778, the vessels which are destined to explore the coast may take the supplies of those colonies at the same time.

I have ordered made the *custodia* which your Reverence suggests in your letter of June 27, to which I have given attention. But if it should not be able to go in any of the vessels, like the rest of the things asked for and which are being solicited, to which has been added an image of San Francisco

with a half pedestal, which was requested by Lieutenant Don Joaquín de Moraga, for the chapel of the fort of that name, it will not fail to go in the following year of 1778, for I am keeping it on my mind.

Governor Don Felipe Neve is instructed to report to me and propose to me whatever he may consider suitable and necessary to make those establishments happy, and since he is also instructed that for everything he is to take advantage of counsel with your Reverence, I hope that, continuing in that fervent apostolic zeal which preoccupies the soul of your Reverence for the propagation of the faith, conversion of souls, and extension of the dominion of the king in those remote distances, you may dispose whatever may appear attainable, advising me what may be necessary, in order that with my measures I may make its effective attainment possible.

May God spare your Reverence many years.  
Mexico, December 25, 1776.

EL BAYLIO FREY DON ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA  
(Rubric).

To the Reverend Father Fray Junípero Serra.



## CHIEF PALMA IN MEXICO

XCV

### BUCARELI TO GALVEZ

MEXICO, OCTOBER 27, 1776<sup>1</sup>

No. 2584

The viceroy of New Spain tells of the arrival in Mexico of Lieutenant-colonel Juan Baptista de Anza with Captain Salvador Palma and three other Indian chiefs of the Colorado River.

MOST ILLUSTRIOUS SIR:

My dear Sir: The return of Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Baptista de Anza to Sonora from his second expedition to the new establishments of San Diego and Monterrey I reported to your Lordship in my letter of August 27, ult., No. 2429; and now to supplement the pleasing notices therein contained relative to the good disposition of the Yuma Indians of the Rio Colorado, I am informing your Lordship that last night this Lieutenant-colonel presented himself before me. In his company have come Captain Salvador Palma, a brother of his, and two other leading Indians of that tribe, for the purpose of having a presidio and a mission placed in the center

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I. 104-6-18. Original.

of their country. Anza disclosed this idea at once, promising us exceptional advantages on account of its ease of accomplishment, the fertility of that region in the production of maize, beans, and wheat with which it will be able to aid the new establishments, and what is more, the adding to the fold of the Church the considerable number of heathen who live on the two rivers, the Gila and the Colorado. By the next mail I shall report to your Illustrious Lordship in due detail whatever may develop in this particular, and meanwhile I hope that you will inform the King.

May God spare your Illustrious Lordship many years. Mexico, October 27, 1776. Most Excellent Sir, the hand of your Lordship is kissed by your most faithful servant.

EL BAILIO FREY DON ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA  
(Rubric).

To the Most Illustrious Señor Don Joseph de Gálvez.

XCVI

PALMA TO BUCARELI

MEXICO, NOVEMBER 11, 1776<sup>1</sup>

Petition of Salvador Palma, Captain of the Yuma tribe, requesting that missions be established in his territory on the margins of the Colorado and Gila rivers, where they live.

MOST EXCELLENT AND DEAR SIR:

It will not seem strange that, animated by the charitable generosity with which your Excellency has received me, and by the great advantages which I am able to promise myself from so noble a nature, I should set forth simply the object of my pretension and the lively anxiety with which I come for a distance of more than seven hundred leagues to implore the assistance of your Excellency. And, persuaded that the only obstacle which might retard the satisfaction of my desires would be an unjust distrust concerning my constancy, it appears to be necessary at the outset to give a brief account of myself, for perhaps this alone will suffice to persuade you of my good faith and of the sincerity with which I request holy baptism for myself, my children, my brothers, my relatives, and my subjects.

<sup>1</sup> Instancia del Capitan de la Nacion Yuma Salvador Palma sobre que se establezcan Misiones en su territorio á las Margenes de los Rios Colorado y Gila donde habitan. A. G. P. M., Provincias Internas, Tomo 23. Original. The manuscript is somewhat mutilated, but there is a good copy in A. G. I., 104-6-18.

My tribe, Sir, lives in several regular settlements situated in the most advantageous locations on the banks of the Gila and Colorado rivers, with whose benefit we enjoy abundant harvests which put us in a position of not needing outside aid in order to live commodiously. I enjoy in it the supreme rule, which, by right of primogeniture inherited from my fathers and by these from my grandfathers, descended as far as myself from one to the other from time immemorial, and upon their death I entered into the command with the universal applause of my subjects.<sup>1</sup>

My first care was to preserve for them the rights of my tribe over my neighbors and to promote the quietude of families and pueblos, and make us respectable to the other tribes. To accomplish this I established new laws and gave force to others already recognized. I considered witchcraft as the greatest of crimes, and so I imposed the death penalty upon witches. Other misdemeanors I punished with blows and beating in proportion to their apparent gravity. I have always regarded polygamy with horror, and although, on account of finding it generally accepted, I did not condemn it in others, yet I did not accept it for myself, for I have never recognized as legitimate any other wife than the one which I have at present, and who has given me six children, five girls and one boy. With regard to the external as well as to the internal government of my state, I saw myself under the necessity of making war on all my neighbors, with the sole exception of the Pápa-

<sup>1</sup> Font throws light on Palma's Pima connections.

gos, with whom I have always been allied in arms and in commerce. But I have been so successful with the rest that I have almost always vanquished them, for which reason I have made peace with them when I have wished, and have never abused my victories.

In these cares I have been occupied all my life, having no other knowledge of the deity than that which was given me by a confused idea, representing him to me as a being superior to all others whom I knew, who lived above the clouds, Creator of all things, and whom I called *Duchi* and *Pá*, and whose favor I implored in all my necessities and perils. Here ended all my light, and doubtless I should have died in this unhappy state if providence had not afforded me other light when least I merited and hoped for it.

In the year '74 it was rumored through the tribe that Captain Ansa was directing his way toward it with men-at-arms. This rumor greatly disturbed the people, and, fearful of some attack, they resolved to receive him with weapons in their hands, and to risk their lives rather than permit themselves to be trodden under foot. I pondered the case carefully. I reflected that I had never done any injury to the Spaniards, neither had I received any from them, and that consequently there was not the least reason why I should fear their arms. Moreover, I reflected that they were at peace with the Pápagos, and that these were our friends and relatives; and it appeared to me unjust to receive with hostility the friends of

my allies, when I had no reason for distrusting them. I set forth these reasons to my people. When I found them intractable I saw myself under the necessity of declaring that in spite of them I should defend the Spaniards with only those who might remain obedient to me; and though not a soul should follow me I alone would place myself at their side, even if it cost me my life. This threat had the desired effect, and not a single one disobeyed my orders.

In a few days I received a message from Captain Ansa, inviting me to come and talk with him on the banks of the river. I went promptly with sixty men and found him at the place indicated. He told me that he had heard about the commotion of the people, but I made him understand that all were now in a different frame of mind. I promised him all the assistance and the services within my limited faculties, and received from him in return all manner of thanks and hospitality, which I have continued to receive down to the present, bestowed with all the love which a father could show for his own son. That same night, which I spent with him, he told me the story, although briefly, of the Supreme Being, and of the laws which He imposes upon men and of the worship which He exacts of them.<sup>1</sup> This so filled my heart, and I found it so in keeping with my own way of thinking, that from that very moment I resolved to be a Christian, even if it should be at the cost of my life. He told me likewise of the existence of the

<sup>1</sup> Anza, Garcés, and Díaz tell of this meeting in their diaries.

king and of his dominions, and of the obedience which is owed to him.

I listened with attention to everything he said to me, and, although in my heart I was convinced, I wished nevertheless to talk it over with my people, not so much in order to obtain approval as to win them over to the same view. I asked permission to tell it to them, and having obtained it I went apart with them. I explained briefly what the Captain had told me, adding that I was resolved to be a Christian and to obey the king, and that, considering these two things to be the greatest happiness with respect to this and the other life, and loving them with the tenderness which I had shown them in continuous experiences, I desired that they likewise should embrace this opportunity. And I found them so well disposed that they agreed unanimously to anything I might do.

With this announcement I went immediately to give a report of everything to the Captain, begging him to receive me as a vassal of the king and treat me as such, imposing any commands that he might wish in order to prove my obedience, my sincerity, and my good faith. Thereupon, to honor me, in the name of his Majesty he gave me a bastón and made me a present of the king's portrait. From this moment I have considered myself honored by the noble status of subject of the greatest of kings.

Next day he began the crossing of the river. In this undertaking we served him, I and my people,

with all the zeal and energy to which the Captain himself will testify; indeed, without this opportune aid of ours perhaps the expedition would have been frustrated. At this same time he gave me the name of Salvador Palma, in which I gloried to the extent of rejecting the name I enjoyed in my own country, which was Olleyquotequiebe, which they say is the equivalent of Wheezy,<sup>1</sup> changing likewise the title of Cofot, expressive of the supreme rule which I had among my people, to that of Capitán.

After I had received these favors from Ansa, they continued on their way. But, a few days later he found himself under the necessity of returning to the same river to recuperate himself,<sup>2</sup> where I had the pleasure of dealing with him a second time, and the satisfaction that he should entrust to my honesty the care of seven men and a considerable portion of provisions and stock. They, disregarding the interests of their country, fled to it; nevertheless they testified that I treated them as brothers, and as vassals all of the same king. The stock and provisions I preserved with greatest scruple, so that on his return he found them intact, and they were very useful to him.<sup>3</sup>

I learned then that he was coming to Mexico, and desiring to unite the quality of Christian with that of vassal of the king, which I already had, I affec-

<sup>1</sup> "Resuello Atravesado," or Obstructed Breath. Evidently the Chief had asthma.

<sup>2</sup> This was when Anza turned back because of sand dunes.

<sup>3</sup> Anza, Garcés, and Díaz tell of this incident in their diaries.



tionately begged him to urge upon your Excellency the establishment of the Catholic religion in my country. He gave me his word that he would do so, assuring me that he would not be more than a year at the longest in bringing it about. Trusting in his promise I was satisfied. But, seeing that the period had passed without his fulfilling it, I undertook at great risk a journey to Sonora to remind him of his word. Arriving at the presidio of San Miguel de Horcasitas, and learning that he was absent, occupied in matters of the royal service, I directed myself to the military governor of those provinces, in order through him to repeat my petition to your Excellency, and he dismissed me consoled with new hopes.

With these hopes I remained until at the end of ten months I suddenly found myself again with my Captain Ansa and many people. At first sight I thought he was about to give fulfillment to his word and success to my desires, and this conviction filled me with inexplicable joy. But I very soon learned that he was bound for another destination.<sup>1</sup> I begged him with the greatest urgency to remain with me and plant the establishment in my country. But he lovingly undeceived me, making me see that he had no authority to do this, that he must carry out the orders given him, and that only in your Excellency resided the necessary faculty to satisfy my just pretensions. I begged him then, and he agreed, that if

<sup>1</sup> This was at the time of Anza's second expedition to Monterey.

at the time of his return his promises to me had not been fulfilled, he would bring me with him to this city, where, placed at the feet of your Excellency, I might unburden my heart and personally make known my desires.

Well, he returned, and on that very day I presented myself before him, accompanied by two hundred men, who were to make known the permission of my people that I might go to Mexico to procure what I desired in the name of the tribe. He asked them if what I was saying was true, and he found that they unanimously agreed, even though I might be detained in the journey two years, nor am I unaware that the Captain, afraid to implicate himself in this matter, secretly inquired into my conduct.

But I have the satisfaction that he did not find anything to cause him distrust of my fidelity. On the contrary, he could see many things which attest my good faith and which ought to convince him of the sincerity of my desires. For example, the first time we met he instructed me that neighborly peace and love were ordered as a precept of the Christian religion; and since the establishment of it depended upon my authority, because my victories put me in a position to give the law, as soon as I departed from his side I gave the appropriate orders to terminate war,<sup>1</sup> and when he returned he found me without enemies. He told me likewise that polygamy was condemned by the Catholic Church, and immediately

<sup>1</sup> He did this when he accepted the cane of authority from Anza.

I banished it from my country, and today there is not a single example of it, for I did not exempt my own brother, from whom I took away seven of the wives which he had.

This, Sir, is a most brief resumé of my life, of the fatigues and cares with which I have come to beg your Excellency that I be given baptism, and that, extending your liberality to my country, you may afford equal benefits for my children, brothers, relatives, and countrymen, by means of missionaries or settlements. To this pretension of mine I am not moved by any human interest or consideration. The only self interest which might induce me would be the desire to acquire Spanish arms to defend myself against my enemies, as I learn other nations have done. But with only the forces of my own tribe I have always chastised all who have tried to do me injury. I have made myself feared by my neighbors and respected by those more distant. No other impulse, indeed, moves me with such anxiety to become one of the faithful as the desire to obtain eternal happiness, which I cannot acquire in any other way.

I know that the religion to which I aspire is all founded in what has been taught me, and that one of the sublimest acts of this religion is to labor for the conversion of the heathen. I know that nothing is more in keeping with the most beneficent spirit of our Catholic Monarch than my conversion to Christianity. Indeed, I have seen in my journey many missions and presidios, and when I have asked the

reason for their existence I have been told that the king paid for it all with no other purpose than the spread of the gospel. I know that the pious inclination of your Excellency toward me will support my pretension. For, if the religion commands it, and the king is pleased to make it possible even to ungrateful and rebellious tribes who have not known how to appreciate the motive of his benefactions, what can cause it to be denied to me? The charge of inconstancy? I think, Sir, that what I have set forth is proof of my firmness. But if this is not enough, your Excellency may order any proofs which you may think necessary, and prompt I am to give any satisfaction which may be asked of me. I am not so infamous as to have the audacity to fail in the obligation which I contract with God and with the king, with your Excellency, with my Captain Ansa, and with all the Spaniards. I love them too much to be ungrateful toward them. I know too well the extent of their power to hope to be able to escape from the full punishment which I should deserve for my perfidy. I should be an object of execration to my people. I should find no one to accept me if they should see me fail in promises so solemn that they are confirmed by the ratification of all my nation. For my part, I do not need to give any other proof than to reaffirm the renunciation which I have made of the supreme rule of my tribe, gladly remaining in the class of vassal, with that rank to which the charity of the king may be pleased to assign me.

My country is abundant in wheat, maize, beans, cotton, tobacco, watermelons, calabashes, and cantaloupes, and is capable, as I see it, of producing many other products, with which the settlements would be able to sustain themselves in plenty. My people number more than three thousand, with whom I obligate myself to defend the missionaries and Spaniards from every insult. I believe that my neighbors will follow my example; and, in case of necessity, I have no doubt I could draw into a general alliance in the services of his Majesty the Galchedunes, Jamajá, or Soyopas, Pimas, Opas, Cocomaricopas, Cajuenes, Jaliqumamas, Cucupas, Comeiás, Pápagos, and part of the Apaches<sup>1</sup> who live on the opposite bank of the Colorado River and who do not communicate with those of this other bank, some because of enmity, and others for the fear which my victories have inspired in them. This alliance, together with the establishments in my country, would not only keep the roads secure for the Spaniards, and keep free mutual communication between California and Sonora, San Francisco and New Mexico, because they will be situated in the center of these provinces, but also, aided by the arms of the Spaniards, we could serve to advantage in the pacification of the neighboring kingdoms.

Finally, most Excellent Sir, for the greater assurance and verification of what I have hereinbefore set forth to your Excellency, I present to you this

<sup>1</sup> All tribes near the Colorado.

respectful petition by the hand of my Captain Ansa, as an ocular witness of my deeds, in order that from him your Excellency may inform yourself how better you may be served, and I have begged him to sign this for me, notwithstanding that in default of signatures I and two of my followers set down with our own hands the holy cross, with the counsel and instruction of my Captain, and for greater justification of what I have set forth and promise to fulfill. Mexico, November 11, 1776.



Most Excellent Sir, at the request of the Yuma captain, Salvador Palma.

JUAN BAP.<sup>TA</sup> DE ANZA (Rubric).

To the most Excellent Señor Frey Don Anttonio María Bucareli y Ursua.

Decree. Mexico, November 13, 1776. Add to this petition copies of what was reported to his Majesty in letters of May 27th and October 27th of last year, 1775; of the royal orders of September 6 of the same year, and of the 14th of February of this year, which deal with the establishment of two presidios on the Gila and Colorado rivers, and immediately send them all to the fiscal, in order that he may do what is best.

ANTONIO BUCARELY (Rubric).

ñamra de dicho mi Capitan, y para maior Justificac.  
de lo que expreso, y o preso cumpla Mexico, y Novre  
11 de 1776.

+

+

+

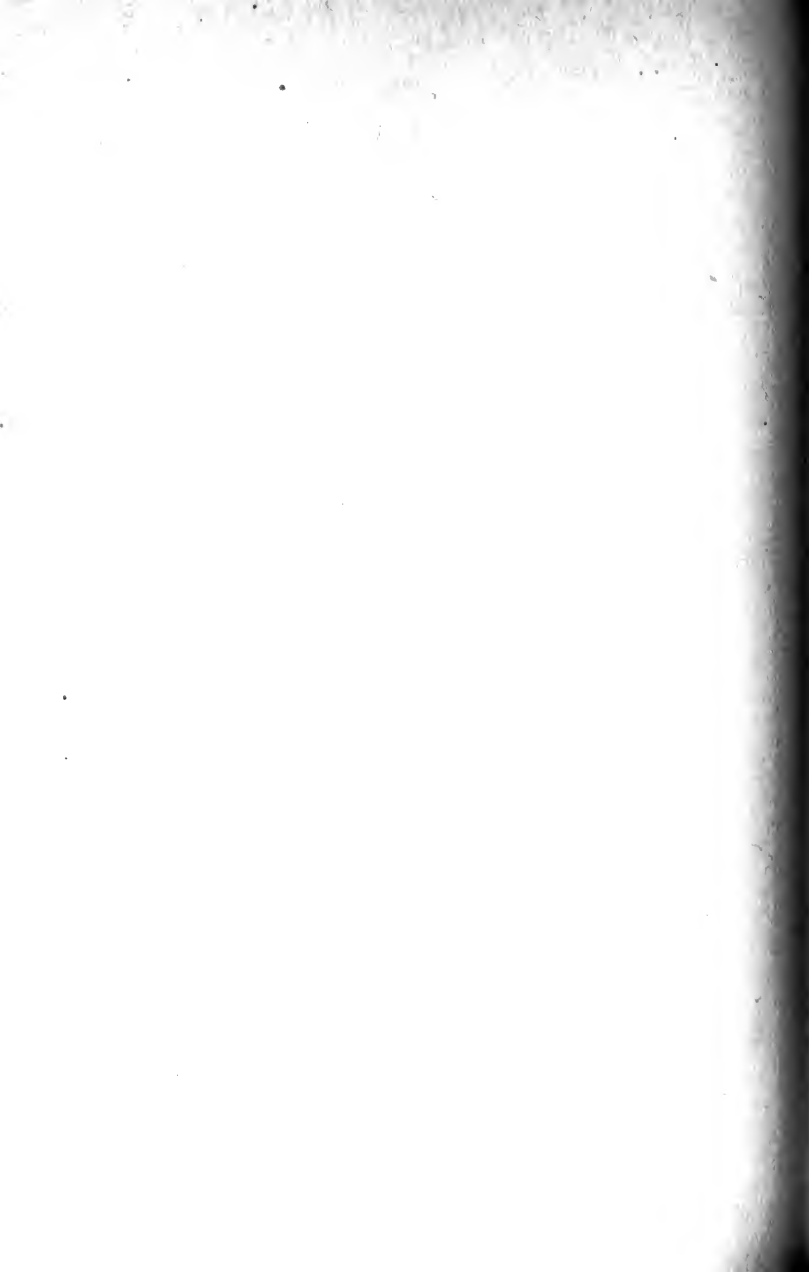
Anuego al Cap<sup>n</sup> Juan Val<sup>n</sup> Palma

Com. V.

Juan de

Pantoja Anza

LAST PAGE OF CHIEF PALMA'S PETITION TO THE VICEROY,  
NOVEMBER 11, 1776





## XCVII

### ARANGOYTE TO BUCARELI

MEXICO, NOVEMBER 18, 1776<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR:

The representation made to your Excellency by the Indian, Salvador Palma, captain of the Yuma tribe, well makes known his ancestry, the situation of his country, how he came to the rule of it, and the administrative measures which he took for its well-being, which he desired, and makes it appear that he has succeeded in his government and in the wars which he has made against other tribes of heathen. In the same way he tells of the idea which, with only the natural light of reason, he had of the Supreme Creator of all things, in which he was confirmed through being taught it, although very briefly, by Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Baptista de Anza, with whom he had several conversations directed to this very purpose, and concerning the existence of the king, as well as of his dominion and the obedience which he owes to him. This he promptly communicated to his people who, in the same way, agreed to be Christians and to acknowledge his Majesty, as a result of which he begged to obtain from your Excellency the establishment of the Christian religion in those lands.

<sup>1</sup> Instancia del Capitan de la Nacion Yuma Salvador Palma. A. G. P. M., Provincias Internas, Tomo 23. Original. Arangoyté was the fiscal, in place of Areche, who went to Peru as viceroy.

But since Anza was delayed in fulfilling the promise which he had made him, he undertook a journey to Sonora, and not finding him there he appealed to the governor in order to repeat the petition through him. But Don Juan Baptista having returned to the neighborhood of the Gila and Colorado rivers, and learned of Palma's conduct, and that through his counsel he had made peace and friendship with his neighbors, and had ceased the wars in which he was engaged, and had prohibited polygamy, he was constrained to conduct him to your Excellency, having ascertained beforehand that it was the wish of his people, even though he might remain here two years. In view of all this and various considerations which he adds in proof of his fidelity, and of his perseverance in the ideas which he entertains, he asks that he be given the holy sacrament of baptism, and, in order that his children, brothers, and relatives may receive the same benefit, that missions be established in that region; and finally, he confirms the renunciation of the rule of his tribe, gladly remaining in the class of vassal in whatever rank the king may be pleased to place him.

He says that his country is fruitful in wheat, maize, cotton, tobacco, watermelons, cantaloupes, and calabashes, and is capable of producing other crops with which to sustain the settlements; and that his people, who exceed three thousand, obligate themselves to defend the missions and Spaniards from any sort of insult. And he even believes that his

neighbors would follow his example, not doubting that in case of necessity he would be able to bring into a general alliance in the services of the king all the groups of Indians which he names, who will keep safe the roads and communication between California and Sonora, San Francisco and New Mexico, being able also to serve with advantage in the pacification of the neighboring kingdoms.

All that this captain sets forth is worthy of admiration, not only for the good fortune that he desires to be converted to our holy faith and to receive the water of baptism, but also for that which all the people of his tribe promise; and finally because thereby the extension and increase of our Catholic monarchy in those regions may be achieved, with the hope that other tribes may become friendly in the same way, and that similar advantages which merit all attention may be obtained.

In order that Salvador Palma may realize his desire to be a Christian, it is necessary that he be previously instructed in the dogmas of the Faith, and, being instructed, that the intention which moves him to it and the prospect of his perseverance should be examined, to remove the fear that, having returned to his country, he may revert to his ancient customs and the life which he has led. But this belongs to the ecclesiastical jurisdiction, and therefore if it be your pleasure, your Excellency may order that an official dispatch be sent, with a certified copy of the representation, to the most

Illustrious Señor Archbishop, so that in his pastoral zeal and his love for the welfare of souls he may take suitable measures in this matter, for which purpose Palma will be told to present himself to his Reverence.

The other point, that of the establishment of missions, in the opinion of the fiscal demands still greater knowledge. 'Tis true, the liberal charity of the king for the benefit of his vassals, and in order that the good fortune of having them become Christians may be obtained, does not refuse to undertake any expense from his royal hacienda, from which are maintained many missionaries and teachers, to the end that the extension of our holy faith may be promoted, yet it is very much to the point to see that expenses of this class be not incurred without the spiritual and temporal profit for which they are intended.

Without any doubt, the high comprehension of your Excellency has held this precept as a reason for not consenting at once to founding on the banks of the Gila and Colorado rivers the missions proposed by the Reverend Father Fray Francisco Garcés, distributing and increasing the troops and locating the presidios in the way which he has said, and to which the Rev. Father Fray Juan Díaz agrees. Instead, you suggested to the comandante inspector that, making the due comparison, hearing the opinion of the governor of Sonora, and in view of what might be reported by the governor of New

Mexico, he should report with regard to the new expenses. Then, an account having been given to his Majesty, the disposition was approved by royal order of the 6th of September, 1775. Afterward, in a letter of the 27th of October of the same year, your Excellency reported the description which Señor Don Hugo Oconor gave of the places in which the presidios might be located. He was of the opinion that the garrison of El Altar might be still retained in its present situation, as useful for the present; he did not consider useful the presidios of Orcasitas and Buenavista, although in those posts troops are necessary, and to supply them he divided equally between them the Flying Company of Terrenate, for which, because it had no officer whatever, he was ordered to nominate a staff; and he considered it desirable that six should remain in Sonora and these two be moved to the Gila and Colorado rivers to protect the new conquests. And since for such dispositions all the necessary light ought to be given by the new expedition which Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Baptista de Anza was going to make by land to Monterrey and San Francisco, decision was withheld until that time, these measures being approved by royal order of the 14th of February of this year.

If the results of these explorations or of the expedition should show the necessity of placing the two presidios on the banks of the rivers, already there will have been achieved all that might be desired for the establishment of the missions, and the

Yuma Indians might go on being catechized with the purpose of drawing them to the true knowledge of God, that they may live under the law of Christ, as well as that conquests in those regions may be promoted. But the present writer is persuaded of the contrary, and thinks that the measures which may be taken will be a gamble, and that the ministers may be exposed, since they will lack protection, and that the outlay may prove to be useless. For all this, since Lieutenant-colonel Anza is here, it appears to the writer that your Excellency should order him to report concerning the affair whatever he may think best, by whatever is dictated to him by his experience and knowledge of the country, the nature of those Indians, and other circumstances which ought to be kept in sight, and what presidios may be established and in what places. With this the fiscal protests that he has complied with what is appropriate to his office. Mexico, November [18], 1776.

ARANGOTÉ (Rubric).

Decree: Mexico, November 18, 1776. Let Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Baptista de Ansa report.

ANTONIO BUCARELY (Rubric).

XCVIII

ANZA TO THE VICEROY

MEXICO, NOVEMBER 20, 1776<sup>1</sup>

MOST EXCELLENT SIR.

In fulfillment of your Excellency's superior decree which precedes, given in consequence of what the fiscal of his Majesty requests, to the effect that my uselessness should give my opinion in the light of what has been presented and requested through me by Salvador Palma, the captain of the Yuma tribe, and that which is manifested by the two dispatches of your Excellency, with the corresponding replies which accompany the representation of the said Palma and which treat of establishments for the Colorado and Gila rivers, I beg to say that, having taken them into account it appears to me very much in keeping with the warlike occurrences in the provinces of Sonora that the six presidios which are destined for its protection should occupy the sites directed by my comandante inspector, Don Hugo Oconór, and which besides are asked for and agreed to by the reverend fathers, Fray Juan Díaz and Fray Francisco Garcés, cited in one of the mentioned documents.

<sup>1</sup> Instancia del Capitan de la Nacion Yuma Salvador Palma. A. G. P. M., Provincias Internas, Tomo 23. Original.

From this I except the presidio of El Alttar. For nobody who knows the importance of its existence in the place where it now is, both for the restraint of the Pimas, who anciently were rebels, and for that of the Apaches, will dispute the opinion concerning it which is given by my comandante inspector. And I insinuate the same with regard to the opinion that San Miguel de Horcasittas should not remain without troops, for although it is in the interior of the province of Sonora, it is today as much combated by the Apaches as any others on this frontier. To this are added other dangers that must be noted and guarded against in the various tribes of Indians which surround it, the most suspicious being the Ceris and Suaquis, who at a former time were rebellious and who are now seeking coalition and alliance with the Apaches.

The removal of the two presidios of the province of Sonora to the Colorado and Gila rivers, of which likewise my comandante inspector treats, is necessary to sustain and protect the missions which may be established on them, and with which I have no doubt we shall obtain the advantages and the advance which Captain Palma promises in his memorial and those which are hoped for by the fathers mentioned. This view of the case, with very little difference, I have entertained before now, being persuaded to it first, by the respect which our arms have caused for all the tribes of Indians, and second, by the docility of the tribes in which we plan to estab-



lish ourselves. For without other operations than that of merely causing them to know, as if incidentally, the law and the king by whom we are governed, they have requested them with such urgency as that which is shown by the coming of the said Palma to this city.

His good faith and that of his tribe appear to me to be sufficiently established by the aid which he has afforded me on two occasions when I have passed through his country. And in proof of this I confess that if he had not borne himself in this manner, and especially when he took me and my troops over on his rafts in several divisions, I could not have accomplished it with a hundred men-at-arms. In the last journey I left in his care for more than five months the reverend fathers Fray Francisco Garcés and Fray Thomas Exiarc, who by disposition of your Excellency were sent to catechize them somewhat and to see what they could accomplish in this and other matters of ours. This last father remained during the time mentioned, so satisfied and content with the progress which his instruction made, that against his will I took him from the Yumas where he urged me to leave him, but since I had no order to this effect I did not do it.

In view of these proofs I do not think that these Indians of whom we are speaking will change from the docility and good nature which they have shown us on all occasions, especially if those who may govern them shall try to maintain them in it, the secular

and ecclesiastical ministers foregoing the severity and force which has been used in other reductions, excessive labor in the fields, and other tasks which are demanded of them at the beginning of their conversion, causes sufficient to exasperate the first generation and to make them inculcate in their children this feeling of exasperation, which often becomes hereditary in all, when by opposite means we may win them to this very thing that we wish, and especially by their Christian instruction in civil life.

In order to secure one or the other end for these people, extreme patience and compassion are necessary. Ordinarily these are not possessed by men who do not understand their qualities, and so it happens that for an indifferent word or deed an Indian is punished. He does not fail to recognize our unreasonableness, and since he cannot avenge himself alone he may suggest it to others, from which arises the loss of many persons, or even a rebellion. Therefore I repeat to your Excellency what on another occasion I have said concerning the same thing, namely, that to this destination nobody should go with authority to command who may lack knowledge of the management of Indians, and who may not be disinterested, charitable, and willing. But this requirement for the most part can be met if your Excellency will order that the missionary teachers must be chosen by the superior who governs them, and that in this appointment the commander to whom the new establishment is to be intrusted may not in-

tervene. In this way all will begin with accord and good harmony, to the satisfaction of those who go to command and to make themselves responsible for the orders of your Excellency, who may be sure that for lack of these reflections our conquests find themselves retarded. Indeed, some of those who are assigned to them are accustomed to be more harmful than useful. Therefore, excluding the first and choosing the second, we may be sure that our reductions will be copious and certain from the beginning, and especially if they are sustained, as has been said, by the presidios, without which it would be hazardous, as likewise on another occasion I have had the honor of signifying to your Excellency.

In every new establishment it is necessary that those who command shall have, besides the qualities already named, spirit, vigor, and consummate diligence, and be accustomed to labor in order to know how to be reconciled with those who are indispensable and have no appeal except after long delay. And therefore it appears to me that for this appointment all the foregoing should be held in mind, and that not all those who offer themselves for it are subjects so useful as those needed by the king in such positions.

In order not to oppress the Indians who are to be reduced, by unaccustomed tasks, it will be well if your Excellency should permit laborers to be taken from the interior of the provinces of Sonora who, besides performing their offices, will serve to in-

struct the neophytes, your Excellency indicating for each mission those who may please you. For this same purpose a considerable number of the nations who inhabit both rivers will serve, for the Pápago tribe intervenes between them and our settlements, and have come to our people for years back. There are already Christians of all ages and both sexes, and if the faith is established in their country, I do not think there is any objection to their returning to it. For, already instructed, as they are, in Castilian, they will serve as interpreters, and, not lacking interpreters of the religion and of our customs, the new Christendom will be on a good and orthodox basis. For this it will be well if the charity of your Excellency should decree their return to their fatherland, those who hold them not being permitted to restrain them on any pretext, for besides the fact that they were born free, they will be the most satisfactory race that could be established in it. To the same end it will contribute much if the families of Spaniards who voluntarily may wish to do so, of whom it is known there are some, be permitted to go to the rivers.

In order to free us of all lack of discipline, which usually is so prejudicial and frequent in remote and new establishments, it also appears to me desirable that your Excellency should be pleased to consult in the matter of his rule the commander who may be destined to this post, and the reverend father superior of the ministers who are to go to take charge of the missions of the rivers, in order that each one

may request what is suitable to his faculties and his position.

The most necessary supplies are raised on the rivers, in proportion to the population, but with the addition of our people they will suddenly become inadequate. And it seems to me important to keep this fact in mind, in order that those necessary may be stored beforehand, taken in part from our pueblos in case those purchased on the rivers should not be sufficient; and that, in order that they may not be lacking in future, we should immediately begin to plant sufficient crops and make irrigation ditches, if there are conveniences, to assure the harvests. For, since the crops of the Indians cannot be depended upon, because the unhappy people have no other tools than a poor stick with which to raise them, we shall be fortunate if they are able to support themselves.

With a view to this and other assistance, it appears to me well to tell your Excellency that the junction of the Gila and Colorado rivers is distant from our last line of presidios and pueblos a little more than a hundred leagues, whose transit in the dry season is impassable to pack trains and to carts which traffic in this way. The same junction must be from the mission and port of San Diego about fifty or sixty leagues and from that of San Gabriel a little more than eighty, both in Northern California. This I think should be kept in mind, in order to estimate the greater or less expense which must be entailed in overcoming this distance, whether it should

be decided to send supplies by land or by sea. This proposal can be examined by others more intelligent than I, as also whether the navigation by the Gulf of California can be accomplished in order to enter in the middle by the Colorado River.

In order that the soldiers and ministers for the post may not lack clothing, tools for building, seed grain, and other things useful in every new settlement, it seems to me it will be well to send the most necessary things from here, for, besides the considerable distance to our nearest settlements, it is to be noted that to these places are sent from here<sup>1</sup> only those things which they need for themselves.

It occurs to me to note also that it must never be forgotten that the treasury of Los Alamos, where I assume the payments will be made for the presidios that are to be moved, must be distant from them more than three hundred and fifty leagues, and about two hundred leagues from the place where they can provide themselves with what they need in the way of clothing and other necessities. To facilitate what may occur in this particular, I think it equally opportune to get the opinion of the commander and missionaries, who, I think from necessity must agree that their annual supplies should be purchased and sent them from here by sea or by land.

The most suitable site which could be found for the presidio that may be assigned to the Colorado River appears to be the very place where Captain

<sup>1</sup> In Mexico.

Palma resides, according to what I have seen and explored hitherto. Extending down the stream fifteen leagues, the Yuma tribe is followed by three others; first the Cojat, then the Cajuen, and at the end of thirty-five or forty leagues the Jaliqumáes, where also the river ends, emptying into the Gulf. In the territory here described there have been seen only three places safe from the river for the establishment of missions. The Indians inform me that there are others, but they are not known to us as are those mentioned.

A little more than a league and a half above the junction, following the Colorado, likewise ends the Yuma tribe, beyond which, ascending the same river for twelve or fourteen more leagues, one comes to the tribe of the Jalchedunes, who are followed by the Jamajáes or Soyopas, the first being distant according to various consonant reports of the tribes named, only five days from the pueblos of Moqui. And these informants also assert that in the country of the mentioned Jalchedunes and Jamajáes there are conveniences for founding other missions, with fields like all those which may be established on this river. Ascending the Gila from the junction, we have a desert for about fifteen leagues, till we come to the first village of the Cocomaricopas, after which come the Opas and Pimas, whose last pueblo must be about fifty leagues from the junction.

The two formal pueblos of this tribe of Pimas, called Zutaquison and Juturitucan, are the places where it is proposed to establish the presidio and

missions, both so contiguous or near to the villages of the Apaches that it is a very rare day that the two tribes do not see each other's smokes with perfect distinctness. From these pueblos, going by a direct road to those of the Jalchedunes on the Colorado River, as one and another tell me, the distance may be thirty-five leagues. From these same pueblos to that in which the garrison in my command is stationed, San Agustín del Tuczón, the distance is twenty-six leagues.

The indicated sites for a presidio, in respect to provisions for subsistence, I do not think will be inferior to those which we promise ourselves at the junction of the rivers, and here it appears there will be even greater certainty in them because the lands which the Indians cultivate have the advantage of ease of irrigation. What they lack absolutely, whether near or far, is pasturage for horses, mules, and cattle. Indeed, from what I have seen, they do not have enough to supply a presidio for four days. From the junction of the rivers downstream and a short distance upstream there is likewise a shortage of pasturage, but not in the same degree as on the Gila. I am told that in the country of the Jalchedunes, ascending the river, there is an abundance of this article so necessary for the animals which we must have. This lack of pasturage noted I have thought it proper to report to you, for whatever use it may serve.

If the presidio is established in the pueblos of the Gila mentioned, there also, or close by, the mis-



sions could be founded. Two of them may embrace the Pima tribe, and three more the Opas and Cocomaricopas if it is so decided. But, without failing to establish these missions, it appears to me that it would contribute more to the extension of our territory and the improvement of this region, and be better calculated to win heathen, and advance ourselves toward the province of Moqui through the district which perhaps we might reduce, if we were to move this presidio to the Colorado River at the upper end of the Jalchedunes or in the center of the Jamajáes, who, as has been said, are only a few days from this Moqui.

From this change it does not appear to me that there is anything to fear, since these Jalchedunes have asked for us, and the Jamajáes, who now have seen and dealt with us, are the branch of the Apaches which Captain Palma promises to win over and who have maintained alliance and friendship with him and his tribe. By establishing one of the presidios here we shall be able to have it at the same distance as if it were on the Gila and our roads will be more direct to Monte Rey and the port of San Francisco, at the same time that we approach New Mexico. And, according to my way of thinking, these new possessions will be better protected against the Apaches than by the contrary plan.

And finally, Most Excellent Sir, I close by saying to your Excellency that the author of the first representation, Captain Salvador Palma, with his companions, besides having received the Christian in-

struction which I have been able to give him since he has been with me, is now receiving it daily, and in it he is making notable application and progress; so much indeed that the Reverend Father Fray Juan Campa, who is giving it, has told me that early next month he may be ready to receive holy baptism, which he begs may come to pass. And in the same terms my small merit requests this of your Excellency, in order that the interested party may see that I have fulfilled my promise to him in this respect.

Assuming his instruction, I know that to grant his desire will give him greater appreciation of the good he is receiving. He will experience at the same time the reverence with which we treat things pertaining to our religion, and be prepared to communicate it to his people when he returns to them, and I have no fear that he will return to his heathen customs, since from the time when I first knew him he has manifested his aversion for most of them and a strong inclination to ours, to obtain which he has traveled all the way to here. For this reason I consider him entitled to obtain his wish, and to receive from us the benefits which with less merit are enjoyed by other tribes, who have not given us such proof of their docility and affection as this one appears to manifest in what hereinbefore is said concerning it. Mexico, November 20, 1776.

JUAN BAP.<sup>TA</sup> DE ANZA (Rubric).

XCIX

BUCARELI TO GALVEZ

MEXICO, NOVEMBER 26, 1776<sup>1</sup>

No. 2592

The viceroy of New Spain reports the reception given the Yuma captain, Salvador Palma, and others, his relatives. He tells of the petition presented requesting that they be given missions, and promises to report whatever may be done in the case.

MOST ILLUSTRIOUS SIR:

My Dear Sir: In letter No. 2584, dated the 27th of last October, I reported that on the night before, Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, who had just arrived from the presidio of Sonora for the purpose of giving me an account of the events of his second expedition made by land to the new establishments of Californias, appeared before me, and I indicated also that he brought with him a Yuma captain, Salvador Palma, a brother of his, and two other principal Indians, his relatives.

When they appeared before me they were already decently clothed, wearing capes in the style of the province of Sonora, Captain Palma being distinguished from the others, both by the suit which last year I ordered him given as a recompense for his friendliness and the assistance furnished the expe-

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I. 104-6-18. Original.

ditions, as well as by the cane which Lieutenant-colonel Ansa delivered to him on the first expedition as a distinction in the name of the king.

Afterward I ordered more decent clothing made for all of them, not excepting the Indian who served as interpreter, who, although of the same tribe, was raised at one of our presidios. They have been given most of the necessary articles of clothing, and I ordered that the suit for Captain Palma should be a uniform with coat and breeches of shiny blue cloth with similar buttons, and a vest of fine scarlet cloth trimmed with gold braid. Thus decked out they came before me on the 4th of the present month when we were celebrating the birthday of the king our Lord. The faces of these faithful heathen reflected the internal contentment which they breathed, and this was greatly augmented when they saw the love with which I received them, giving to Palma another cane, the benevolence which I showed them, and the appreciation for them manifested by the brilliant concourse of people who were present that day in this palace.

The object of the visit of these Indians, which I also indicated in my former letter, has been adequately confirmed by the supplications of Captain Palma, but it is much more strongly substantiated by the petition which subsequently he has placed in my hands through Don Juan Bautista de Ansa. It reduces itself to requesting that they be granted missionaries to instruct their subjects and neighboring tribes in the dogmas of our holy faith, and

especially that he and his companions be favored with holy baptism before leaving this capital.

With this pious intention, they are all being instructed in the first rudiments of the religion, and according to the aptness which they all show I think that within a short time they will be ready to enter the fold of our Holy Church. And I shall be disposed to encourage such wishes, because they promise the reduction of many tribes, the extension of the dominion of the king in those regions, and the spread of the gospel, which is the principal object of his Majesty and the one which has inspired his conquests.

The petition of the Indian Palma is now going through the regular channels, and I am disposed to hasten arrangements in order to take advantage of this opportunity. The results I shall report as occasion arises, in order that your Illustrious Lordship may be pleased to report them to his Majesty, as I hope you will inform him of what has already been done, trusting that it may receive the sovereign approval.

May God spare your Illustrious Lordship many years. Mexico, November 26, 1776. Most Excellent Sir, the hand of your Illustrious Lordship is kissed by your faithful servant.

EL BAILIO FREY DON ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA  
(Rubric).

To the Most Illustrious Señor Don Joseph de Gálvez.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> In the original expediente Palma's Instancia of November 11 follows here.

## C

### GALVEZ TO BUCARELI

MADRID, DECEMBER 24, 1776<sup>1</sup>

To the viceroy of New Spain. His Majesty approves the arrangements made for the establishment of the presidio and missions of San Francisco, and orders that as soon as Captain Salvador Palma and others of his Yuma tribe arrive at the capital they be given a very friendly welcome, regaled, distinguished, etc.

The king being apprised of what your Excellency sets forth in your letter of the 27th of last August concerning the return to Sonora of Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, the occurrences and events in the new establishments of San Diego and Monterrey, the good disposition of the Indians of the Colorado River and its environs, and the measures dictated by your Excellency for the establishment of the presidio and missions of San Francisco, his Majesty approves the arrangements made by your Excellency in these matters, and it is his royal wish that I charge your Excellency, as I now do, that Captain Salvador Palma and others of the Yuma tribe who may accompany him to that capital of Mexico be given a very friendly welcome,

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I. 104-6-18. Draft.

regaled, and distinguished, in order that they may return to their country satisfied and content. I hereby make known to your Excellency his royal order for your intelligence and guidance. God, etc. Madrid, December 24, 1776. [JOSÉ DE GÁLVEZ.]

To the Señor Viceroy of New Spain. In duplicate.

## CI

## GÁLVEZ TO BUCARELI

EL PARDO, FEBRUARY 3, 1777<sup>1</sup>

The king, being informed, agrees with particular satisfaction and charges him to give to these Indians the missionaries and the guard of presidial troops which they need, and he is communicating an order for this purpose directly to the comandante general of Sonora.

February 3, 1777.

[JOSÉ DE GÁLVEZ.]

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I. 104-6-18. In reply to No. 2584.

## GALVEZ TO CROIX

EL PARDO, FEBRUARY 10, 1777<sup>1</sup>

In company with Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Anza, governor-elect of New Mexico, there arrived at that capital Captain Salvador Palma, a brother of his, and two other principal Indians of the tribe of the Yumas of the Colorado River, with the request that a presidio and a mission be established for them in the center of their country. The king has learned of this with particular pleasure, and on this date he is ordering the viceroy of New Spain to give these Indians the missionaries and the protection of presidial troops which they need, and that to your Lordship I communicate directly, as I hereby communicate, a like order, that you may fulfill the part which belongs to you.

El Pardo, February 10, 1777. May God spare your Lordship many years. JOSEPH DE GÁLVEZ.  
To Señor Don Theodoro de Croix.

Mexico, May 23, 1777. Let a certified copy of this royal order be added to the expediente concerning the erection of presidios and missions on the Colorado and Gila rivers. DE CROIX.

Mexico, May 27, 1777. I certify that this is a copy of the original.

ANTONIO BONILLA (Rubric).

<sup>1</sup> Instancia del Capitan de la Nacion Yuma Salvador Palma. A. G. P.M., Provincias Internas, Tomo 23.



### CIII

## GALVEZ TO BUCARELI

FEBRUARY 10, 1777<sup>1</sup>

His Majesty has heard the petition of Salvador Palma with the greatest benevolence and tenderness, and orders that his just request be heeded by that government; that the comandante general of Sonora be ordered to distinguish him always and protect him in the peaceful possession of his rule and chieftainship, and that no one of his tribe or of the other tribes whom Palma may attract, or who may voluntarily recognize vassalage, shall be injured in any way in their goods or their lands with a view to giving them to Spaniards; and that this same conduct shall be observed with the heathen who may only accept friendship, commerce, and dealings with us, although they may not wish to be vassals of the king, so that the friendly treatment and relations may go on inclining and drawing them gently to the true knowledge of our sacred religion.

[JOSÉ DE GÁLVEZ.]

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I. 104-5-18. Draft. Reply to No. 2592.

CIV

BAPTISM OF CAPTAIN PALMA, CHIEF OF  
THE YUMA INDIANS, AND THREE  
OTHERS OF HIS TRIBE

MEXICO, FEBRUARY 13, 1777<sup>1</sup>

I, Dr. Don Alonso Velázquez Gastelu, senior curate of this holy cathedral church of Mexico, certify that in a book (one of those in this sacristy recording Indian baptisms) which begins on September 1, 1777,<sup>2</sup> on the reverse of folio 49, is the first entry as follows:

On the 13th day of the month of February in the year of our Lord, 1777, having obtained the necessary permission and approval of the Most Illustrious Archbishop of this holy cathedral and its archbishopric, and with the consent of Dr. Don Alonso Velázquez Gastelu, its senior curate and *semanero*, I, Licenciado Don Agustín de Echeverría y Orcolaga, penitentiary canon of its suffragan parish of Durango, in the bishopric of Guadiana, catechized, anointed with holy oil and baptized an adult catechumen, captain and chief of the Yuma tribe of

<sup>1</sup> Copia de expediente formado para la averiguacion del insulto cometido por los Indios Yumas. A. G. I., 104-6-19. The copy was made at Arispe. This place had recently become the capital of the Provincias Internas, and many records had been sent from Mexico thither.

<sup>2</sup> This date is manifestly wrong.

heathen Indians of the banks of the Rio Colorado in the Interior Provinces of Sonora in this North America, he being sufficiently instructed in the Christian doctrine and its mysteries. To this Indian, known commonly as Palma, I gave the name of Salvador Carlos Antonio. As sponsor and godfather to him stood Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, captain commandant of the presidios of said province, who was advised of his obligation and spiritual kinship, and who had conducted this chief by order of his superior from those remote parts to this capital. And that it may be on record, I signed it with the said curate.

DR. ALONSO VELÁZQUEZ GASTELU.

AGUSTÍN JPH. DE ECHEVERRÍA Y ORCOLAGA.

I, Dr. Don Alonso Velázquez Gastelu, etc.

On the 13th of February, 1777, having obtained the necessary permission and approval of the Most Illustrious Archbishop of this holy church and its archbishopric and with consent of its senior curate and *semanero*, Dr. Don Alonso Velázquez Gastelu, I, Licenciado Don Agustín de Echeverría, penitentiary canon of its suffragan parish of Durango, in the bishopric of Guadiana, catechized, anointed with oil and baptized an adult catechumen, sufficiently instructed in the Christian doctrine and its mysteries, of the Yuma tribe of heathen Indians of the Rio Colorado in the Interior Provinces of Sonora in North America. To this Indian I gave the name

of Joseph Antonio Marcelo. By order of his superior, Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, captain commandant of the presidios of said provinces, had conducted him from those remote parts to this capital. Don Ramón Goya stood sponsor and godfather to him (in the name and with the power of Don Marcelo de Ansa) having been advised of his obligation and spiritual kinship. And in order that it may be on record, I signed it with the said curate.

DON ALONSO VELÁZQUEZ GASTELU.

AGUSTÍN DE ECHEVERRÍA.

I, Dr. Don Alonso Velázquez, etc.

On the 13th of February, 1777, having obtained the necessary permission and approval of the Most Illustrious Archbishop of this holy cathedral and its archbishopric, and with the consent of Dr. Don Alonso Velázquez Gastelu, its senior curate and *semanero*, I, Licenciado Don Agustín de Echeverría, catechized, anointed with holy oil, and baptized an adult catechumen, sufficiently instructed in the Christian doctrine and its mysteries, of the Yuma tribe of heathen Indians of the Rio Colorado in the Interior Provinces of Sonora in this North America. To this Indian I gave the name of Ygnacio Joseph. Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Ansa had conducted him by order of his superior from those remote parts to this capital. Don Pedro de Ansa stood sponsor and godfather to him, having been advised of his obligation and spiritual kinship. And

in order that it may be on record, I signed it with the said señor curate.

DR. ALONSO VELÁZQUEZ GASTELU.

AGUSTÍN JOSEPH DE ECHEVERRÍA Y ORCOLAGA.

I, Dr. Don Alonso Velázquez Gastelu, etc.

On the 13th day of February, 1777, having obtained the necessary permission and approval of the Most Illustrious Archbishop of this holy cathedral and its archbishopric, and with consent of Dr. Don Alonso Velázquez Gastelu, its senior curate and *semanero*, I, Licenciado Don Agustín de Echeverría, penitentiary canon of its suffragan parish of Durango, catechized, anointed with holy oil, and baptized an adult catechumen, sufficiently instructed in the Christian doctrine and its mysteries, of the Yuma tribe of heathen Indians of the Rio Colorado in the Interior Provinces of Sonora. To this Indian I gave the name of Pedro. Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Ansa had conducted him by order of his superior to this capital. Don Juan Lucas Lasaga, perpetual regidor of this most noble city, was his godfather, having been advised of his obligation and spiritual kinship. And in order that it may be on record, I signed it with the said curate.

DR. ALONSO VELÁZQUEZ GASTELU.

AGUSTÍN ECHEVERRÍA.

I certify that these are copies of the originals.  
Arispe, February 28, 1782.

ANTONIO BONILLA (Rubric).

## GALVEZ TO BUCARELI

EL PARDO, FEBRUARY 14, 1777<sup>1</sup>

To the viceroy of New Spain, to the end that the Yuma captain, Salvador Palma, be treated with distinction, protected in his chieftainship, and granted the missions and presidio which he requests for his tribe, with the rest that is set forth.

In a letter of the 26th of last November, No. 2592, your Excellency transmits a copy of the representation which under date of the 11th of the same month was presented to you by the Yuma captain, Salvador Palma, through Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Ansa, who had escorted him thither. The king has listened with the greatest benevolence and tenderness; he approves the entertainment and the distinction with which your Excellency has received and treated this generous Indian, his brother and his relatives; he wishes that this treatment be continued; and orders that his just request be heeded, granting them holy baptism when they shall be properly instructed to embrace our holy religion, and in good time providing the missions and presidios which they request.

It is the wish of his Majesty that this Salvador Palma be always distinguished and be protected in

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I. 104-6-18. Draft. Filed with No. 2592.

the peaceful possession of his rule and chieftainship, and that no one of his tribe or of other tribes whom Palma may attract, or who voluntarily may acknowledge vassalage to his Majesty, shall be injured in any way in their goods and lands for the purpose of giving them to Spaniards; and that this same treatment shall be observed with the heathen who may only accept friendship, commerce, and dealings with us, although they may not wish to be vassals of the king, to the end that the good treatment and relations may go on inclining and attracting them gently to the true knowledge of our holy religion. I am informing your Excellency of this, with the particular charge of his Majesty that you attend to its prompt fulfillment, in the intelligence that under this date I am sending the corresponding royal order to the comandante general of Sonora. May God spare your Excellency many years. El Pardo, February 14, 1777.

[JOSÉ DE GÁLVEZ.]

To the Señor Viceroy of New Spain.

Draft. In duplicate.

## CVI

### GALVEZ TO CROIX

EL PARDO, FEBRUARY 14, 1777<sup>1</sup>

Advising him that he has ordered the viceroy of New Spain that the Yuma captain, Salvador Palma, be treated with distinction and maintained in his chieftainship, and that the heathen who may wish to make peace with us shall not be injured in their goods and lands, even though they may not accept vassalage to his Majesty.

In Mexico Captain Salvador Palma, chief of the Yuma Indians, a brother of his, and other relatives, have presented themselves to the viceroy with the desire to embrace our sacred religion and to live in vassalage to the king, he and his nation offering their services to establish peace, commerce, and friendly relations with many other tribes living in the vicinity of the Colorado River. Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Ansa has escorted, accompanied, and instructed these Indians, after having ascertained with mature observation their docility, veracity, and good qualities. For these reasons the king has been very much pleased with the benevolent welcome, entertainment, and distinc-

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I., 104-6-18. Filed with No. 2584. A mutilated copy is in A. G. P. M. Instancia del Capitan de la Nacion Yuma Salvador Palma.



tion with which the viceroy has received them, and he has been pleased to order that this treatment be continued, and that as soon as they are properly instructed in the rudiments of our religion they be accorded holy baptism, and in due time given the missions and presidios which they request.

The deliberate wish of his Majesty is that this Salvador Palma shall always be distinguished, that he be protected in the peaceful possession of his rule and chieftainship, and that no one of his tribe, or of other tribes whom Palma may attract, or who may voluntarily ask for vassalage to his Majesty, shall be injured in any way in their goods and lands for the purpose of giving them to the Spaniards; and likewise that this be observed with the heathen who accepts only friendship, commerce, and dealings with us, even though they may not wish to be vassals of the king, in order that the friendly welcome and treatment may go on attracting them gently to the true knowledge of our holy religion. By order of his Majesty I make this known to your Lordship, with the very special charge that you see to its entire and prompt fulfillment with all your faculties and means.

May God spare your Lordship many years. El Pardo, February 14, 1777.

To Señor Don Teodoro de Croix.

[JOSÉ DE GÁLVEZ.]

Duplicate.

CVII

BUCARELI TO GALVEZ

MEXICO, FEBRUARY 24, 1777<sup>1</sup>

No. 2753.

The viceroy of New Spain reports that the Yuma Indian, Salvador Palma, and his companions, have already been baptized, and tells of the arrangements made for the payment of expenses incurred in entertaining them and providing them decent clothing.

MY DEAR SIR:

In letter No. 2592 I reported the arrival at this capital and the errand of the captain of the Yuma tribe, Salvador Palma, and his brother and companions, setting forth in brief the essence of the petition which he had presented to me through Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, and saying that, since one of the principal points of it was that they be favored by admission to our religion through holy baptism, they were being instructed in its holy mysteries in order to merit this favor.

When the proper time arrived this ceremony was performed in the sanctuary of this holy metropolitan church on the 13th of the present month, at night, their godfathers being the same Lieutenant-colonel, the regidor Don Juan Lucas de Lasaga, Don

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I. 104-6-18.

Manuel Ramón de Goya, and Don Pedro de Ansa, and they received the water by the hand of the penitentiary of the holy church of Durango, Don Agustín de Echeverría, who is now here.

In order that these Indians might be more decent on such a formal occasion, I had requested that they have made for them new regular suits at the king's expense, being convinced that no outlay of this kind is idle since from their reduction great hopes are entertained, because they dominate many neighboring tribes and are the ones who can open or close the way to the tribes recently visited between Sonora and New Mexico and between this province and the new establishments of Californias.

Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Baptista de Ansa, being ready to return to his presidio to escort the new Christians to their country, presented to me an account of the expenses incurred in supporting them on the way, in their care, and for living expenses and clothing in the capital. The total (not including transportation, which service this officer performs for the king) amounts to 664 pesos, 5½ reales, and in the report which accompanies it he leaves to my decision the fixing of the salary which ought to be given to the Indian interpreter for instructing the Yumas, his compatriots, and for the trouble of having come with them.

Seeing no objection to charging this small expense to the royal estate, by a decree of the 19th of this month I ordered the royal officials of these

chests to reimburse this officer, delivering to him in addition 400 pesos, to pay the salary which he may think proper for the interpreter, and the expenses of the journey until he places them all in their own country, with the condition that, having completed the journey, he shall present to the royal officials of Los Alamos a formal account of the expenditure of this sum, to whom also he is to turn over any balance that may be left, or from whom he is to request any shortage, as is proper.

The departure of all of them should take place some day next week, and the arrival of Salvador Palma with his companions in their own country can do no less than promise an increase of the hopes entertained for the reduction and vassalage of those tribes, and all these reports can not fail to be pleasing to the king. Being thus persuaded, I am transmitting them to your Illustrious Lordship, in order that you may be pleased to report to his Majesty, whose royal approval I hope will be merited by the arrangements made with respect to the payment of the expenses incurred with these Indians.

May God spare your Illustrious Lordship many years. Mexico, February 27, 1777. Most Illustrious Sir, the hand of your Lordship is kissed by your most faithful servant.

EL BAILIO FREY DON ANTONIO BUCARELY Y URSUA  
(Rubric).

To the Most Illustrious Señor Don Joseph de Gálvez.

CVIII

GALVEZ TO BUCARELI

ARANJUEZ, JUNE 3, 1777<sup>1</sup>

To the viceroy of New Spain, stating that his Majesty, being informed of the baptism of the Indian Salvador Palma and his brothers and companions, approves the expenses incurred in the journey, entertainment, and clothing of these Indians, the arrangements made for their return and the payment of a suitable salary to the interpreter, and such other expenses as may arise until they are delivered to their country, and he gives thanks for the zeal with which Lieutenant-colonel Ansa has promoted these events.

Through your Excellency's letter No. 2753, dated the 24th of last February, the king has been informed of the baptism of the Indian Salvador Palma and his brothers and companions in the sanctuary of that cathedral; and he approves with particular satisfaction the expenses incurred in the journey, the entertainment, and the clothing of these Indians, and the arrangements made by your Excellency for their return and for the payment of a suitable salary to the interpreter, together with other expenses which may arise until all are delivered to their own

<sup>1</sup> A. G. I., 104-6-18. Filed with No. 2753. Draft.

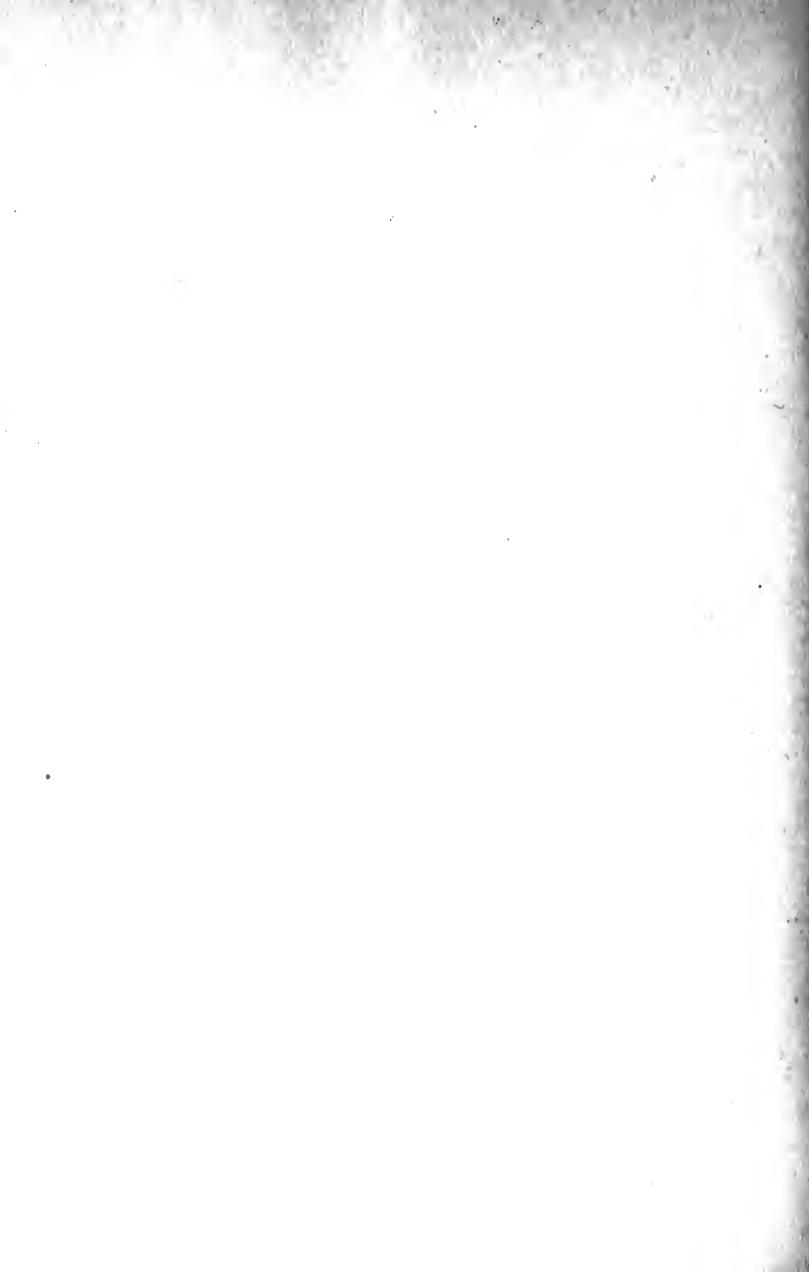
country. And his Majesty, being informed of the zeal and efficiency with which Lieutenant-colonel Don Juan Bautista de Ansa has served in promoting these affairs, he wishes your Excellency to thank him in his royal name. By order of his Majesty I am reporting this to your Excellency in order that it may be done.

May God spare your Excellency many years.  
Aranjuez, June 3, 1777. [JOSÉ DE GÁLVEZ.]

To the Señor Viceroy of New Spain.

In duplicate.

## INDEX





## INDEX

### A

Abad, Santiago, 26, 83, 250, 258.  
 Abipay (Yavapai), 244.  
 Acedo, Joseph Antonio, 203.  
 Agaguechis (Niforas), 245.  
 Alamos, Los, 201, 223, 228, 233, 254, 257, 390, 412.  
 Alcaldes, 209, 252.  
 Altar, El, 12, 64, 72, 75, 109, 110, 112, 123, 130, 137, 159, 285, 286, 295, 381, 384.  
 Anza, Juan Bautista, letters by, 1, 3, 50, 57, 109, 111, 113, 117, 120, 130, 150, 209, 216, 218, 220, 301, 303, 307, 308, 310, 311, 313, 383; first expedition to California, 1-206, second expedition to California, 208-362; return to Mexico, 363-414.  
 Apaches, 7, 33, 35, 52, 64, 71, 74, 88, 115, 123, 131, 197, 240, 243, 244, 278, 280, 283, 286, 287, 290, 335, 375, 384, 393.  
 Arangoyté, fiscal, 377, 382.  
 Aranjuez, 29, 79.  
 Archbishop of Mexico, 380, 402, 403, 404.  
 Areche, Joseph Antonio de, royal fiscal, 12, 18, 23, 26, 41, 80-81, 249, 258.  
 Aribaca (Arivaca), 286.  
 Arispe, 405.

Arizona, 52. See *Pimería Alta*.

Arriaga, Julián de, letters by, 79, 107, 188, 192; letters to, 41, 53, 77, 95, 102, 162, 169, 173, 175, 183, 186, 194, 199, 201, 259, 293, 331, 336; mentioned, 296, 326, 335, 342.

Arroyo del Trabuco, 156.

Arze y Arroyo, Juan Antonio de, 26, 83, 250, 258.

Atil, El, 72, 90.

Ayala, Joseph de, 203.

Ayala, Juan de, 298.

### B

Bailón, Pascual, 155.

Baja California. See *Lower California*.

Baldés (Valdés), Juan Bautista, 159.

Barroeta, Juan Chrisóstomo de, 26, 82, 249, 258.

Barry, Phelipe, 204.

Bernabé, Fray Juan Chrisóstomo Gil de, 49, 85.

Bisanig (Vísani), 286.

Blue Friars, 75.

Bonilla, Antonio, 150, 183, 184, 400, 405.

Borrogo Valley, 308.

Bravo (Brabo), Antonio, 218, 253.

- Bucareli y Ursua, Antonio María, communications by, 41, 53, 77, 94, 95, 162, 165, 169, 173, 175, 183, 186, 194, 201, 214, 234, 259, 264, 266, 267, 269, 291, 293, 321, 324, 328, 331, 336, 343, 345, 350, 358, 361, 395, 410; communications to, 3, 8, 12, 33, 47, 50, 55, 57, 68, 79, 80, 99, 107, 109, 111, 113, 117, 128, 130, 143, 150, 153, 160, 164, 188, 192, 209, 216, 218, 220, 238, 276, 297, 301, 303, 307, 308, 310, 311, 313, 314, 319, 326, 365, 377, 383, 398, 399, 401, 406, 413; mentioned, 6, 7, 8, 10, 39, 42, 47, 50, 53, 54, 55, 58, 68, 73, 75, 76, 77, 79, 81, 84, 90, 91, 92, 98, 99, 101, 107, 108, 109, 110, 113, 117, 120, 122, 133, 137, 144, 145, 150, 153, 154, 161, 163, 164, 170, 171, 172, 174, 179, 181, 183, 185, 186, 188, 193, 195, 196, 197, 198, 201, 202, 204, 205, 206, 209, 212, 213, 215, 216, 217, 220, 221, 224, 238.
- Buenavista, 65, 75, 217, 253, 285, 335, 353, 381.
- Buena y Alcalde, Fray Mariano Antonio de, 33.
- C**
- Caborca (Cavorca), 109, 112, 124, 136, 241, 285, 286.
- Cahuilla Valley, 120, 131.
- Cajón Pass, 131.
- Cajuenches (Cahuenches), 305, 306, 314, 315, 332, 333, 375, 391.
- Calabazas, 288.
- Calexico, 6.
- California, 4, 10, 18, 19, 44, 68, 70, 81, 88, 96, 101, 102, 103, 105, 106, 112, 119, 122, 123, 127, 131, 133, 140, 141, 147, 151, 165, 173, 179, 192, 194, 197, 205, 239, 241, 250, 255, 256, 262, 264, 266, 267, 270, 314, 333, 345, 355, 375, 379, 395, 411.
- Cambón, Fray Pedro, 122.
- Campa Cos, Fray Miguel de la, 122, 394.
- Campos, Father Joseph Agustín de, 59.
- Cañada de Oro, 242.
- Canary Islands, 190.
- Carlos III, King of Spain, 28, 32, 44, 54, 76, 84, 86, 97, 104, 105, 114, 116, 129, 163, 171, 190, 193, 202, 260, 373.
- Carmel Mission (Carmelo), 151.
- Carrizal, El, 38, 308.
- Cartagena, Fray Romualdo, 55-56.
- Castillo, Juan Angel, 203.
- Ceris. See *Seris*.
- Cerro Prieto, 138, 163.
- Channel of Santa Barbara. See *Santa Barbara*.
- Chihuahua (Chiguagua), 22, 150.
- China, commerce with, 138.
- Choquet, Diego, 358.
- Clothing for colonists, 225-227.
- Coahuila, 55.
- Cocomaricopas, 1, 72, 90, 305, 315, 375, 391.
- Cocopah Mountains, 163.
- Cócopas (Cucapas), 314, 333, 375.
- Cofot, Yuma head chief, 370.

- Cojats (Cogats, Cojas), 117, 120, 391.
- Cojo, El, 1.
- College. See *San Fernando, Santa Clara*.
- Colorado River, 4, 5, 6, 10, 13, 15, 17, 24, 30, 33, 41, 43, 44, 46, 51, 53, 57, 59, 61, 69, 70, 77, 79, 80, 88, 91, 94, 109, 111, 113, 114, 116, 117, 118, 119, 120, 124, 131, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 138, 141, 147, 151, 152, 153, 158, 160, 163, 164, 167, 169, 170, 175, 204, 211, 215, 239, 242, 244, 246, 260, 271, 275, 276, 279, 282, 287, 293, 295, 301, 304, 308, 315, 319, 326, 331, 333, 334, 351, 363, 364, 365, 366, 375, 378, 381, 383, 390, 392, 393, 400, 403, 405, 408.
- Comeiás, 375.
- Concepción, La, packet boat, 347.
- Corbalán (Corvalán), Pedro, 33, 134.
- Córdova, Fray Juan de Diós de, 199.
- Coro de Gauchi (Santa Rosa de), 29.
- Corona, Torivio, 155, 203.
- Costansó (Constansó), Miguel, 7, 8, 9, 11, 16, 17, 19, 21, 27-28, 41, 80, 99-100.
- Council of the Indies, 30, 82, 182, 197, 199.
- Council of war and royal exchequer (junta de guerra y real hacienda), 25-32, 82, 93, 233, 249.
- Crespi, Fray Juan, 125.
- Crespo, Bishop Benito, 69.
- Crespo, Francisco Antonio, 109, 161, 164, 171, 179, 238, 248, 278, 295.
- Croix, Marqués de, 105.
- Croix, Theodoro de, 400, 409.
- Cueto, Miguel de San Martín, 200.
- Culiacán, 209, 212, 251, 252.
- D**
- Díaz, Fray Juan, 111, 122, 129, 133, 143, 144, 146, 149, 153-154, 157, 186, 248, 276, 290, 294, 335, 370, 380, 383.
- Dominicans, 44, 61, 62, 70, 75, 86, 122, 197, 204, 205, 257, 345.
- Durango, 402, 403, 411.
- E**
- Eceta (Hezeta), Bruno, 323.
- Echarri, Miguel Gregorio de, 223, 256.
- Echeverría y Orcolaga, Agustín, 402, 403, 404, 405, 411.
- Echeveste, José, estimate of the cost of the Anza expedition, 215, 222, 225, 233, 254, 255.
- Ehrenberg, 241.
- Eixarch (Exiarc), Fray Tomás, 311, 314, 315, 385.
- Elizondo, Domingo de, expedition against Seris, 4, 13, 64, 138.
- El Pardo, 107, 108, 200, 327, 400, 409.
- El Paso, 22.
- Escomaqui, El, 286.
- Escudo, a gold coin worth about eight pesos, or a silver coin worth about a peso, 175, 182.

Espinosa, José Ygnacio, 218,  
219, 253.

Espinosa, Juan de, 203.

### F

Fages (Faxes), Pedro, 94, 103,  
131, 146, 151, 266, 274, 317.

Fernandinos, 75, 122, 148. See  
*San Fernando de Mexico*.

Figuerola, Francisco, 203.

Font, Fray Pedro, 224, 255,  
261, 269, 270, 274.

Fora, Nicolás de la, map of the  
Interior Provinces, 9, 16, 80.

Fronteras, 216, 285, 295.

Fuerte, Sinaloa, 209, 251.

Fuster, Fray Vicente, 122.

### G

Gadsden Purchase, 12.

Gálvez, José de, 4, 102-106,  
266, 326, 327, 348, 350, 357,  
364, 397, 398-401, 406-409,  
410-414.

Garcés (Garzés), Fray Fran-  
cisco, 4, 6, 12, 13, 14, 15, 20,  
26, 27, 31, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37,  
38, 39, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48,  
49, 53, 55, 57, 58, 59, 61, 65,  
72, 76, 77, 79, 80, 81, 83, 85,  
90, 91, 92, 95, 97, 108, 111,  
122, 123, 124, 128, 132, 133,  
143-147, 149, 155, 159, 162,  
180, 215, 224, 247, 248, 255,  
261, 269, 271, 276, 277, 279,  
293, 304, 311, 313, 314, 315,  
319, 320, 333, 335, 352, 370,  
380, 383, 385.

Gerónimo, Chief, 52.

Gifts for the Indians, 232.

Gila River, 33, 35, 48, 53, 79,  
80, 88, 91, 94, 111, 113, 117,  
143, 147, 151, 153, 160, 164,  
169, 204, 239, 241, 250, 260,  
270, 279, 282, 286, 293, 303,  
306, 308, 315, 326, 351, 364,  
365, 378, 381, 383, 389, 392,  
393.

Gil de Bernavé. See *Bernabé*.

Gileños (Gila Pimas), 35, 53,  
79, 241, 245.

Gorráez, Joseph de, 93, 258.

Goya, Manuel Ramón de, 255,  
257, 404, 411.

Grijalva (Grijalba), Pablo, 219.

Guadalajara (Guadalaxara),  
100, 101, 347.

Guadalupe Mission, 346.

Guadiana, bishopric of, 402,  
403.

Gulf of California, 7, 9, 15, 73,  
170, 390.

Gutiérrez de Herrera, Juan  
Antonio, 26, 83, 250, 258.

### H

Hacendados, 212.

Hijosa (Hixosa), Francisco de,  
185, 235, 329.

Horcasitas (Orcasitas), San  
Miguel de, 33, 49, 65, 164,  
353, 381, 384.

### I

Ibipays-geduoeh, 245.

Ibipays-guich, 245.

Ibipays-moch, 245.

Indians, 6, 9, 10, 14, 27, 38, 47, 48, 69, 85, 88, 103, 112, 114, 115, 144, 158, 167, 170, 196, 197, 221, 238, 240, 243, 253, 275, 280, 281, 294, 310, 314, 315, 316, 329, 333, 337, 341, 350, 351, 354, 363, 379, 384, 385, 386, 387, 389, 391, 392, 395, 396, 397, 398, 399, 400, 405, 411. See *names of tribes*.  
 Interior Provinces, 169, 403, 404, 405.

## J

Jalchedunes (Galchedunes, Halchedunes, Xalchidunes), 241, 245, 269, 305, 319, 332, 375, 391, 392, 393.  
 Jallicuamais (Jaliquamáes, Quiquimas), 314, 333, 375, 391.  
 Jamajabas (Jamajáes, Soyopas), 319, 375, 391. See *Mohaves*.  
 Janos, presidio, 29, 150, 326.  
 Jayme (Jaume), Fray Luís, 122, 328, 338.  
 Jesuits, 34, 55, 58, 59, 60, 69, 85, 113, 116, 126, 152.  
 Jila River, 48. See *Gila River*.  
 Juncosa, Fray Domingo, 272, 275.  
 Juturitucan, 391.

## K

Keler, Ignacio Xavier, 59.  
 Kino, Eusebio Francisco, 59, 72, 73.

## L

Lafora, Nicolás de la. See *Fora*.  
 Laguna de Santa Olaya (Ola-lla), 120, 302, 306, 307, 309, 310, 312, 313.

Language, Indian, 367.  
 Lasaga, Juan Lucas, 405, 410.  
 Lasuén, Fray Fermín, 141-142, 148-149.  
 Limón, Cayetano, 217, 253.  
 López de Toledo, Antonio Joseph, 268.  
 Loreto, 11, 18, 19, 21, 155, 167, 173, 177, 206, 346, 347.  
 Lower California (Baja California), 73, 133, 140, 141, 163, 205.  
 Luisiana, 285.

## M

Madrid, 106, 197, 200, 399.  
 Mail, 140.  
 Mallorca, 190.  
 Malo, Felix Venancio, 82.  
 Mangino, Fernando, 26, 83, 250, 258.  
 Maricopas. See *Cocomaricopas*.  
 Martínez, Joseph María, 203.  
 Martínez, Juan, 203.  
 Martínez, Ysidro, 203.  
 Mendinueta, Pedro Fermín de, 276, 295.  
 Mendoza, Juan de, 59.  
 Mesía, Fernando, 26, 250, 258.  
 Mexico, 11, 23, 32, 45, 46, 54, 78, 81, 93, 94, 98, 101, 102, 105, 151, 152, 159, 163, 165, 168, 172, 174, 182, 185, 186, 187, 197, 202, 203, 209, 213, 217, 219, 224, 233, 236, 258, 263, 265, 266, 268, 271, 292, 296, 322, 325, 327, 330, 335, 344, 348, 357, 363, 364, 370, 372, 376, 382, 394, 397, 400, 408, 412.  
 Mohaves (Jamajabs, Jamajáes, Soyopas), 114.

Monclova, presidio, 326.  
 Monteagudo, Manuel de, 139.  
 Monterey, 2, 3, 4, 10, 11, 12, 17,  
 19, 28, 33, 38, 41, 43, 45, 47,  
 49, 51, 54, 58, 61, 63, 72, 77,  
 83, 84, 85, 87, 90, 92, 94, 96,  
 97, 102, 103, 104, 107, 108,  
 111, 115, 121, 125, 130, 131,  
 132, 133, 137, 144, 145, 146,  
 147, 148, 151, 152, 157, 162,  
 163, 167, 169, 173, 179, 180,  
 186, 194, 198, 199, 201, 204,  
 214, 215, 225, 227, 238, 239,  
 243, 246, 250, 259, 262, 264,  
 272, 273, 274, 280, 288, 289,  
 294, 307, 317, 331, 337, 346,  
 347, 349, 350, 352, 358, 360,  
 363, 381, 393, 398.  
 Moquis (Hopis), 239, 240, 244,  
 245, 246, 306, 334, 391, 393.  
 Mora, Fray Vicente, 267.  
 Moraga, José Joaquín, 216, 253,  
 354, 362.  
 Mugártegui, Fray Juan, 121,  
 157.

## N

Negreiros, Ignacio, 250, 258.  
 Neve, Felipe, 204, 206, 266, 329,  
 340, 345, 346, 347, 348, 355,  
 360, 362.  
 New California, 103, 106. See  
*California*.  
 New Mexico, 6, 17, 38, 49, 52,  
 63, 68, 85, 87, 88, 104, 150,  
 238, 239, 240, 244, 245, 246,  
 280, 288, 294, 334, 375, 379,  
 381, 393, 400, 411.  
 New Regulation of Presidios,  
 282, 283, 284, 285, 288, 289,  
 294, 326, 335.  
 New Spain, 41, 77, 79, 83, 95,  
 162, 169, 175, 186, 189, 191.  
 See *Mexico*.

Niforas, 305, 332.  
 Nogales, 59, 65, 150, 216.  
 North America, 403, 404.  
 Northern California (Alta Cali-  
 fornia, New California), 80,  
 119, 130, 134, 203, 211, 216,  
 301, 389. See *California*.  
 North Pacific, 172, 263.  
 Nueva Galicia, frigate, 132, 151.

## O

O'Conór, Hugo de, 22, 38, 184,  
 201, 202, 276, 326, 381, 383.  
 Old California, 173, 177, 344,  
 349. See *Lower California*.  
 Olguín, Antonio, 59.  
 Olleyquotequiebe (Salvador  
 Palma), 117, 370.  
 Opas, 36, 53, 72, 79, 90, 241,  
 305, 375, 391, 393.  
 Opatas, 75.  
 Orcasitas, 350, 353, 381. See  
*Horcasitas*.  
 Order of Calatrava, 25.  
 Order of Preachers (Dominic-  
 ans), 199.  
 Order of Santiago, 25.  
 Ortega, José de, 58.  
 Ostimuri, 225.  
 Ozio (Ocio), Antonio de, 100,  
 101.

## P

Pacific Slope, 5.  
 Pack Train, 231.  
 Palma, Salvador, 113, 117, 158,  
 160, 171, 176, 177, 180, 188,  
 195, 213, 244, 303, 311, 315,  
 331, 333, 334, 351, 363, 365-  
 414.  
 Palomino, Juan Miguel, 203.  
 Paláu, Fray Francisco, 172, 291.  
 Pangua, Fray Francisco, 141.

Pápagos, 34, 35, 48, 53, 63, 72,  
79, 87, 90, 117, 119, 120, 280,  
360, 367, 375, 388.

Papaguería, 48, 285, 288.

Pass of San Carlos, 120.

Pastoras, 227.

Paterna, Father Antonio, 275.

Peña, Fray Tomás de la, 298.

Peninsula. See *California*.

Peramás, Melchor de, 40, 46, 79,  
152, 154, 155, 159, 203, 327.

Pérez, Juan, 125, 156.

Pescadero Dam, 302.

Philippines, 114, 170.

Piatos (Pimas), 285, 289.

*Pilar, El*, bilander, 340.

Pimas, 1, 4, 9, 12, 17, 22, 26,  
29, 30, 31, 35, 42, 64, 70, 71,  
87, 111, 119, 120, 245, 285,  
315, 332, 334, 351, 375, 384,  
391, 393.

Pimería Alta, 12, 35, 48, 68, 72,  
75, 81, 112, 115, 116, 137,  
223.

Pimería Baja, 12, 75, 153.

Pineda, Juan de, 2.

Pious Fund, 255, 256, 262, 264.

Pisón, Gaspár, 267.

Pitic, 38, 223, 257.

Pitiquí, 285, 286.

Portolá, Gaspar de, 4, 7, 9, 18,  
99, 156, 185.

*Príncipe, El*, packet boat, 151,  
166, 184, 322, 329, 339, 341,  
358, 361.

## Q

Querétaro, 55, 56, 111, 135, 136,  
137, 148, 270.

Quiquimas, 62, 70, 86, 89, 333.

## R

Ramírez, Joseph Marcos, 203.

Rations, 228.

Recruits, 173.

Revolledo, Juan Oliban, 29.

Rio Colorado, 125, 126.

Rio de San Francisco, 210, 215,  
221, 238, 240, 242, 278, 354.

Rio de San Pedro, 295.

Rivera y Moncada, Fernando  
de, 94, 100, 101, 122, 133,  
167, 171, 173, 214, 215, 221,  
233, 234, 235, 236, 252, 254,  
257, 261, 292, 298, 299, 316,  
317, 328, 329, 339, 340, 341,  
343, 347, 350, 353, 355, 356,  
358, 359.

Riverside, 137.

Rodríguez del Toro, Joseph,  
25.

Romero, Joseph Antonio, 203.

Rubí, Marqués de, 285, 289, 294.

Russians, 97, 98.

## S

Salaries, 229.

Salazar, Fray Estévan de, 33,  
39.

San Agustín del Tieson, 34,  
392.

*San Antonio*, packet boat, 103.

San Bernardino, 52, 285, 286,  
295.

San Blas, 11, 21, 100, 101, 102,  
103, 151, 166, 171, 178, 180,  
185, 189, 235, 256, 322, 323,  
329, 340.

San Borja, mission, 142, 346.

*San Carlos*, packet boat, 103,  
171, 297, 322, 329, 339, 341.

- San Carlos de Buena Vista, presidio, 217, 218.
- San Carlos de Monterey, 140, 214, 218, 219, 220, 229, 233, 252, 253, 254, 318.
- Sánchez, Fray Miguel, 122.
- Sánchez, Marcial, 203.
- San Diego, 2, 6, 8, 9, 10, 11, 16, 17, 18, 19, 21, 28, 41, 45, 47, 51, 58, 61, 63, 72, 77, 80, 81, 87, 89, 92, 94, 96, 99, 102, 104, 111, 121, 123, 126, 127, 132, 134, 140, 143, 146, 148, 152, 155, 159, 167, 170, 173, 179, 180, 250, 267, 316, 328, 329, 336, 337, 339, 343, 344, 346, 347, 349, 350, 351, 353, 358, 359, 360, 361, 363, 389, 398.
- San Dionisio, 113, 116, 166, 167, 169, 174, 175, 176, 179.
- San Felipe Creek, 308.
- San Fernando de Mexico, College of, 135, 136, 165, 172, 256, 264.
- San Francisco, 21, 96, 104, 167, 170, 174, 195, 234, 236, 259, 260, 264, 270, 272, 273, 274, 275.
- San Francisco, River of, 209, 220, 239, 242, 252, 256.
- San Gabriel, mission of, 99, 115, 119, 120, 122, 126, 129, 130, 131, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 142, 143, 144, 150, 153, 155, 156, 157, 158, 159, 175, 177, 179, 180, 194, 274, 307, 316, 328, 336, 339, 389.
- San Gregorio, 308.
- San Ildefonso, 189, 191.
- San Jacinto (San Joseph), 137, 144.
- San José*, packet boat, 151, 185.
- San José Comondú, 346.
- San Joseph, 137, 158, 267.
- San Juan Capistrano, mission, 344, 358, 359.
- San Juan Capistrano River (San Luís Rey), 156.
- San Lorenzo, 193.
- San Luís Gonzaga, 173.
- San Luís Obispo, 131, 136, 137, 272, 274, 275, 298, 328.
- San Luís Rey River, 156.
- San Martín Cueto, 199.
- San Miguel de Horcasitas, 40, 51, 65, 75, 159, 164, 285, 335, 371, 384.
- San Pedro de los Yumas, 315.
- San Pedro River, 239, 242, 243, 286.
- San Sebastián, 158.
- Santa Ana, River, 137, 156, 158.
- Santa Barbara, Channel of, 152, 359, 360.
- Santa Catalina Mountains, 242.
- Santa Clara, mission of, 104, 359.
- Santa Cruz, 286.
- Santa Cruz de Querétaro, 15, 122, 126, 135, 148, 153, 261.
- Santa Fé, 104, 106.
- Santa Gertrudis del Altar, 123, 161, 238, 248.
- Santa Olaya, 314.
- Santa Rosa de Corodeguache, 181, 216, 253, 326.
- Santa Rosa de las Lagas, 108.
- Santa Theresa, arroyo, 286.
- Santiago*, alias *Nueva Galicia*, 156, 179, 184, 196, 361.
- San Xacome, 163.



San Xavier del Bac, 4, 12, 33,  
48, 53, 72, 77, 83, 87, 241,  
288, 320.

San Ygnacio de Tubac, 233,  
254, 346.

Sastre, Matheo, 33-40, 46, 47-  
49, 53, 66, 79, 81, 84-85, 91.

Sebastián Taraval. See *Tarabal*.

Sedelmayr, Father Jacobo, 59.

Seris, 64, 283, 285, 289, 384.

Serra, Fray Junípero, 96, 103,  
104, 107, 121, 127, 139, 140,  
143, 152, 156, 165, 166, 180,  
206, 234, 237, 261, 262, 265,  
266, 268, 292, 297, 299, 300,  
316, 318, 324, 325, 330, 356,  
362.

Sierra de California, 241.

Signal Mountain, 108.

Sinaloa (Cinaloa), 80, 167, 173,  
209, 212, 251.

Sonóita, 59, 72, 73.

Sonora, 2, 3, 11, 13, 15, 20, 23,  
31, 54, 56, 75, 84, 89, 95, 100,  
104, 105, 111, 114, 131, 134,  
135, 137, 139, 153, 162, 166,  
169, 171, 175, 178, 184, 188,  
192, 194, 195, 201.

Sonora River, 65.

South Sea, 10, 18, 28, 61, 170.

Soyopas (Mohaves), 114, 375,  
391.

Spaniards, 1, 6, 14, 64, 87, 91,  
115, 136, 159, 179, 288, 315,  
334, 352, 367, 368, 373, 374,  
375, 378, 388, 401, 407, 409.

Stock from Old California, 349.

Suaquis, 285, 384.

Supplies for friars, 313.

## T

Tarabal, Sebastián, 112, 115,  
119, 123.

Tenerife, meridian, 16.

Tepic, 347.

Terrenate, 59, 150, 152, 170,  
183, 211, 217, 251, 253, 286,  
295, 381.

Tiburón Island, 38.

Trabuco, arroyo, 156.

Trinidad (Thrinidad), port of,  
323.

Tubac, 2, 7, 9, 10, 11, 15, 16,  
17, 18, 21, 24, 26, 31, 41, 47,  
54, 67, 68, 74, 76, 77, 80, 83,  
90, 93, 94, 95, 103, 104, 105,  
111, 123, 124, 162, 192, 194,  
198, 217, 228, 229, 243, 250,  
286, 288, 295, 301.

Tucson (Tuquizon), 68, 242,  
245, 288.

Tumacácori (Tumacácory), 33,  
288.

## U

Ures, San Miguel de los, 276,  
290, 294.

Urrea, Bernardo de, 38, 160,  
161, 169, 171, 184, 188, 244.

## V

Valcárcel y Formento, Domingo,  
25, 82, 249, 258.

Valdés (Baldés), Juan Bautista,  
111, 143, 146, 155-159,  
177, 179.

Valdez, Pedro Toral, 26, 83, 250.

Valencia, Juan Antonio, 203.

Velázquez Gastelu, Dr. Alonso,  
402, 403, 404, 405.

Velicatá, San Fernando de, 267.

Verger, Fray Rafael, 142, 165.

Vildósola, Gabriel Antonio de,  
50.  
Villa Urrutia, Antonio, 249, 258.  
Vizarrón, Juan Antonio, 24, 29.

## X

Xalchidunes, 241, 245.  
Ximénez, Father, 319.

## Y

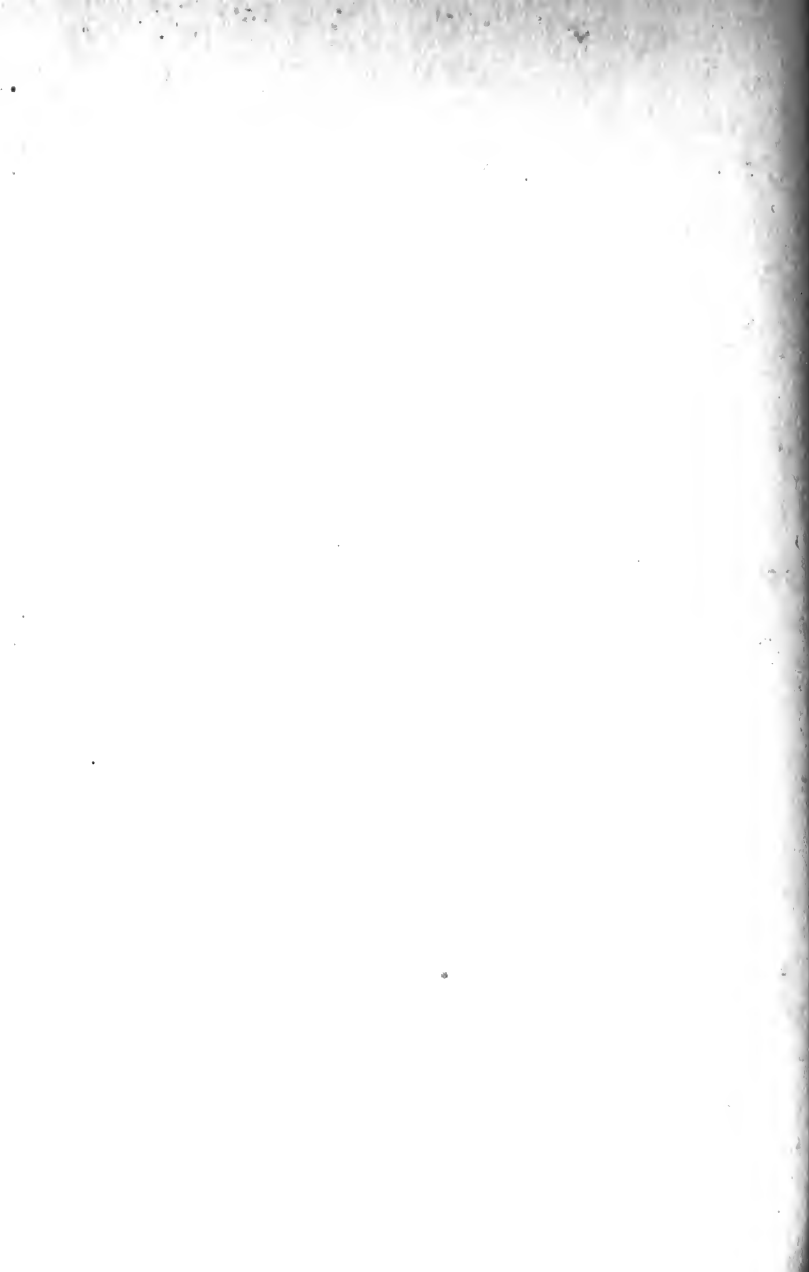
Yriarte, Fray Juan Pedro de,  
199.

Yumas, 1, 5, 13, 14, 17, 22, 29,  
31, 42, 62, 70, 72, 84, 86, 90,  
113, 117, 118, 119, 120, 145,  
147, 163, 164, 167, 176, 177,  
179, 188, 204, 241, 242, 243,  
303, 305, 311, 331, 351, 363,  
382, 383, 385, 391, 395, 400,  
402, 403, 404, 405, 410.

## Z

Zacatecas, Guadalupe de, col-  
lege of, 55.







F864

B663

v.5

copy 3



